

THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO ANN COULTER

How Coulterism Corrupts Christianity and Conservatism



“I’m a Christian and everything comes from being a Christian ...
Christianity fuels everything I write.” – Ann Coulter

DANIEL J. BORCHERS



The Gospel According to Ann Coulter

**How Coulterism Corrupts Christianity
and Conservatism**

Daniel J. Borchers

Citizens for Principled Conservatism

The Gospel According to Ann Coulter: How Coulterism Corrupts Christianity and Conservatism

© 2012 Daniel Borchers

First printing: June 10, 2012

All rights reserved. Written permission must be secured from the publisher to use or reproduce any part of this book, except for brief quotations in critical reviews or articles.

Citizens for Principled Conservatism believes that the nature and use of the photos, cartoons, and graphics provided in this book which are not in the public domain or not the property of the publisher constitutes “fair use” of any such material as provided for in section 107 of the U.S. Copyright Act. This material is intended primarily for educational purposes and is distributed freely.

Unless otherwise noted, all Scripture quotations are taken from the New King James Version. Copyright © 1982 by Thomas Nelson, Inc. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

Front and back cover design: *Arianna Hodges*

Front cover photos are courtesy of (left) *Fraser R Dachille*, NYU 09, Webmaster NYU College Republicans, taken at NYU, 12/10/08, and (right) *Shane Noem*, taken at CPAC, 2/27/09.

All other photos obtained from the Internet and other open sources.

Published by Citizens for Principled Conservatism.

Printed in the United States of America.

Daniel Borchers, President
Citizens for Principled Conservatism
P.O. Box 506
Odenton, MD 21113
www.CoulterWatch.com
CoulterWatch@yahoo.com
240-476-9690

*Have I therefore become your enemy
because I tell you the truth?*

– Galatians 4:16

Table of Contents

Preface: My Faith Journey.	ix
--	----

“My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me.”
– John 10:27

Introduction: Speaking the Truth in Love.	xii
---	-----

*“But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things,
which is the head, even Christ.”* – Eph. 4:15

Chapter 1: Roots: Ann Coulter’s Christian Heritage.....	1
--	---

*“You will know them by their fruits. ... every good tree bears good fruit,
but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can
a bad tree bear good fruit. ... Therefore by their fruits you will know
them.”* – Mt. 7:16-20

Chapter 2: Faith: Once Delivered For All.	5
---	---

*“Beloved, while I was very diligent to write to you concerning our
common salvation, I found it necessary to write to you exhorting you to
contend earnestly for the faith which was once for all delivered to the
saints.”* – Jude 3

Chapter 3: Creator: The Author and Finisher of Everything.....	9
---	---

*“looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy
that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has
sat down at the right hand of the throne of God”* – Heb. 12:2

Chapter 4: Forgiveness: Required for All Believers.	12
---	----

*“For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also
forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will
your Father forgive your trespasses.”* – Mt. 6:14-15

Chapter 5: Redemption: The Power of His Blood.	17
--	----

*“In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins,
according to the riches of His grace.”* – Eph. 1:7

Chapter 6: Transformation: By His Spirit.	21
---	----

*“I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take
the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh.”*
– Ezek. 36:26

Chapter 7: Love: God's Desire and Goal for Us. 27

"A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another." – John 13:34-35

Chapter 8: Truth: True Freedom in Christ. 32

"And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. ... Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed." – John 8:32,36

Chapter 9: Reconciliation: Our Ministry as Peacemakers. 39

"Now all things are of God, who has reconciled us to Himself through Jesus Christ, and has given us the ministry of reconciliation." – 2 Cor. 5:18

Chapter 10: Equality: Self-Evident Truths. 43

"There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus." – Gal. 3:28

Chapter 11: Life: Choosing an Abundant Life. 52

"I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly." – John 10:10

Chapter 12: Hypocrisy: Defaming Our Lord and Savior. 61

"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone." – Mt. 23:23

Chapter 13: Heresy: Appearing as an Angel of Light. 66

"having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!" – 2 Tim. 3:5

Chapter 14: Godless: Exhibiting the Works of the Flesh. 73

"Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are ... of which I tell you beforehand, just as I also told you in time past, that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God." – Gal. 5:19-21

Chapter 15: Religious Right: Warriors for Truth. 79

"God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth." – John 4:24

Chapter 16: Religious Left: Ambassadors for Love.	85
<i>“My little children, let us not love in word or in tongue, but in deed and in truth.” – 1 John 3:18</i>	
Chapter 17: Perfected: The End of Sanctification.....	91
<i>“For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified.” – Heb. 10:14</i>	
Chapter 18: Victimhood: Christian Persecution Complex.	99
<i>“These things I have spoken to you, that in Me you may have peace. In the world you will have tribulation; but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.” – John 16:33</i>	
Chapter 19: Confessions of Faith.	106
<i>“And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death.” – Rev. 12:11</i>	
Chapter 20: It Really <i>Is</i> a God Thing	112
<i>“And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.” – Rom. 12:2</i>	
Chapter 21: Prayer.	119
<i>“Confess your trespasses to one another, and pray for one another, that you may be healed. The effective, fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much.” – Jas. 5:16</i>	
Appendix 1: Sampling of Coulter’s Elimination Rhetoric.	122
<i>“I think we ought to nuke North Korea right now just to give the rest of the world a warning. Boom! ... I just think it would be fun to nuke them and have it be a warning ... to the world.” – Ann Coulter</i>	
Appendix 2: Selected Doctrines of the Religious Right.	129
<i>“The Religious Right [is] nonexistent ... a bogeyman ... a meaningless concept ... the left’s imaginary enemy.” – Ann Coulter</i>	
Appendix 3: Selected Doctrines of the Religious Left.....	130
<i>“All liberals are atheists. Only the ones who have to stand for election even bother pretending to believe in God.” – Ann Coulter</i>	

Appendix 4: Living the Resurrected Life.....	132
---	------------

“That I my know Him and the power of His resurrection.” – Phil. 3:10

Acknowledgements	143
-------------------------------	------------

Author Bio	144
-------------------------	------------

Preface

My Faith Journey

“My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me.” – John 10:27

A Little Lamb

Before addressing the spiritual, historical, and political issues which form the substance of this book, it is only appropriate that I introduce myself to my readers. I was born in the mid-1950s and raised a Christian. When I entered college, I turned away from God and remained a prodigal until my 12th year in the U.S. Navy, when God called me back to Him and drew me into His church.

At that time, military service was incompatible with that denomination’s doctrines, so I gave up my career in the military. For the next nine years, I was unemployed or underemployed. At one point, foreclosure was barely forestalled. However, those financially-lean years were spiritually enriching. God taught me reliance upon Him and instructed me in the faith once delivered. During that time, I devoted myself to studying His Word and devouring religiously-oriented publications. I also whet my ideological appetite on *The Washington Times*, *Conservative Chronicles* and *National Review*. To broaden my perspective, I also read a wide-range of libertarian and liberal books and magazines. Delving into the how and why of things became second nature to me. During that period, my spiritual focus was on prophecy, truth, biblical history, the law, and biblical covenants.

Transformation

In the mid-1990s, the Holy Spirit initiated significant doctrinal changes in our fellowship and He began touching my own heart in even more profound ways.¹ God also provided me with a full-time job in 1995 (where I remain employed to this day). Where I had known Jesus as my Lord and Savior, I came to know Him as my Brother and Friend.

I became politically active, writing letters to the editor, developing newsletters, and organizing pro-life marches. In August 1996, I started a Christian conservative newsletter called *BrotherWatch*, which examined political, cultural, economic, and religious issues from a conservative perspective. Jesus initiated a deep personal relationship with me, teaching me to trust Him in all things and giving me His heart of love. Where in the past I had focused on truth and righteousness, God added to that His love and grace.

Early on, God began showing me His awesome nature and His eternal, unconditional love. In 1996, He introduced me to the ex-gay community. I attended many of their conferences and spiritual retreats, and I edited their newsletters for a couple of years. He also introduced me to Jews for Jesus. I was also blessed to observe a Titus 2 women’s conference. In 1997, I organized a group of men from my church to participate in the Promise-Keepers’ Stand in the Gap rally in D.C., along with over a million other men, and the more modest 10-year reunion in 2007, numbering in the thousands.

Jesus taught me the power of His love, the enormity of His grace, and the reliability of His promises.² He has shown me how to pray for a pure heart as David did (God *always* answers those prayers!). He has

¹ For background on our denominational transformation, see Joseph W. Tkach, Jr., *Transformed by Truth*, Multnomah, 1997.
² See Philip Keller, *A Shepherd Looks at Psalm 23*, Zondervan, 1977, and Philip Keller, *A Shepherd Looks at the Good Shepherd and His Sheep*, Zondervan, 1978. See Women of Worship’s Order My Steps (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NNiKdfjUaw0>) exemplifying a reliance upon God for every aspect of one’s life.

strengthened me in my own Garden of Gethsemane experiences where I have poured out my heart to Him, yet yielded to His will. And Jesus has taught me how to love my enemies.³

Sanctification

Over the past decade, God has stressed to me the importance of spiritual growth, of growing in the grace and knowledge of Jesus, of being transformed into His image, of putting on the new man, of using the spiritual gifts He has entrusted to us, of becoming like Jesus that we might proclaim Him to the world and bear witness of Him in our daily lives.

Before doing *anything* of importance – whether attending a conference, conducting an interview, giving a sermon, holding a small group prayer meeting – I ask Jesus for two things: to cleanse me from top to bottom with His blood and to clothe me from head to toe with His righteousness, so that whatever I may say or do, people will see *Him*, not me.

I've come to see that the only good thing in me is Jesus and that the best that I ever do is from Him. Without Him, I can do nothing, but in Him, all things are possible.

Do I do everything perfectly? Of course not. In the big things and the small, I screw up. Though I strive to do the right thing, imperfection and human nature get in the way. But our Father in heaven always forgives the returning prodigal and the erring child of God. He always gets me back on track. The Holy Spirit guides me in the right direction and prompts me according to His will. And Jesus gives me His courage to step out in faith and His peace when I do. In my fervent prayers, God has more often changed my heart than my circumstances. While bearing my cross and following Him, I find rest at His feet.

On one occasion, earnestly intent to know the truth about a matter and willing to accept that truth whatever it might be, God spoke audibly in my right ear. His Spirit has prompted me to make specific phone calls to particular individuals at diverse times, to write letters of encouragement to certain people in distress or mourning, to provide financial aid to certain people in need, and to minister to an elderly couple (the wife had ALS). His Spirit has prompted me to begin projects, make course corrections, and complete those projects (or put them to rest when their purposes have been fulfilled).

My very best writing is inspired by God. It flows smoothly, with grace and truth. Generally, I will write and re-write, to make it as accurate as possible. His Spirit smoothes out the rough edges and adds His grace to the outcome. Any failings are my fault, not His.

Currently, I am confronting extremism and hypocrisy within the Conservative Movement, a paradigm which has invaded the body of Christ itself. Towards that end, I have written numerous articles and appeared on dozens of talk radio shows to combat the dangers of Coulterism. My post-9/11 essay for *The Washington Monthly* ("The Wisdom of Ann Coulter") is frequently referenced on the Internet and cited in print publications.⁴

Time and again, God has reaffirmed my mission, opened doors of opportunity, given me support from surprising places – and given me His peace in the midst of it all.

³ See my sermon, "[Living the Resurrected Life](http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3)," in Appendix 4. Audio can be obtained at <http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3>.

⁴ See "[The Wisdom of Ann Coulter](http://www.washingtonmonthly.com/features/2001/0111.coulterwisdom.html)," *Washington Monthly*, October 2001, <http://www.washingtonmonthly.com/features/2001/0111.coulterwisdom.html>.

As a direct consequence of my public criticism of Coulter, she and her colleagues have privately and publicly defamed me (thus ostracizing me from a large segment of the conservative community), harassed my family and friends, threatened me, and even physically assaulted me.

But God has never – not once – even hinted to me that my present work is either misguided or complete. Rather, He has reinforced my convictions and He has used these attacks against me to expose the truth about the attackers. Once again, in the midst of trials, He has given me His peace.

I neither seek, nor fear, the limelight. Introverted by nature, I am zealous to speak His truth. Naturally predisposed to lead a quiet life, God has placed me in positions of public speaking – from politics on talk radio to sermons at church. Wherever He leads, I am prepared to follow.⁵

⁵ See Rich Mullins' *Sometimes by Step* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Mv1VfqPdSms>).

Introduction

Speaking the Truth in Love

“But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ.” – Ephesians 4:15

An Angel of Light?

Über-conservative Ann Coulter appeared as an angel of light in the midst of the darkness of contemporary American politics. Among a new generation of political pundits to emerge in the mid-1990s, Coulter was one of the few to openly express her religious beliefs, defend the faith of her forefathers, and extol the Creator.

During the Clinton impeachment saga, Coulter began appearing on religious talk shows as a messenger of morality and godliness, a role which led to speaking engagements for numerous religious, pro-morality, and pro-life events and to her becoming an “expert” for a number of DVD documentaries produced by a host of religious and conservative organizations.

In 2006, Coulter was recognized as a religious leader with the publication of her fifth book, *Godless*. That year she was also called “the most hated woman in America”¹ whose book should have been entitled *Heartless*.² Oddly, a person perceived to be heartless became the arbiter of godliness.

The Gospel According to Ann Coulter seeks to differentiate between sound Christian doctrine and incorrect interpretation of Scripture, between espoused beliefs and exhibited behaviors – to affirm the truth correctly espoused by Coulter and to correct the many errors, in style and in substance, conveyed by Coulter.

The structure of this book is simple. The Preface provides my own personal testimony, my own faith journey. Chapter one offers background and insight into Coulter’s own Christian heritage and the evolution of her faith. Chapter two provides a brief overview of the importance of the faith once delivered. Chapters three through 13 evaluate Coulter’s accuracy in conveying specific key Christian doctrines. Chapter 8 also incorporates a case study in how Coulterism corrupts Christianity, causing otherwise godly people to become hypocritical or heretical, demonstrating the importance of this book and the spiritual dimensions it addresses.

Chapters 14 through 18 examine the intersection of religion and politics as they appear in Coulter’s writings and professions of faith. Chapter 19 summarizes key points of this book and contrasts authentic and disingenuous expressions of faith. Chapter 20 highlights Coulter’s growing spiritual schizophrenia over the past couple of years. Finally, Chapter 21 offers up a prayer for Coulter, her acolytes, the body of Christ, and the nation. Four appendices build upon the themes of this book.

Rather than becoming mired in contentious theological complexities, this book delves deeply into the sweet spiritual simplicity in Scripture. The apostle Paul admonishes all Christians everywhere to speak



¹ Headline on the cover of the *National Enquirer*, 6/26/06.

² Hillary Rodham Clinton, “Sen. Clinton: Coulter’s 9/11 remarks ‘vicious, mean-spirited,’” *USA Today*, 6/7/06.

the truth in love, building upon the apostle John's declaration that Jesus entered this world "full of grace and truth" and that "grace and truth came by Jesus Christ" (Jn. 1:14,17). Indeed, Paul notes a correlation between "speaking the truth in love" and spiritual maturity. The former leads to, and is a component of, the latter.³

Both those crucial aspects of the gospel message are evident in Jesus' own mission statement (Luke 4:18-21):

"The Spirit of the LORD is upon Me, because He has anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives and recovery of sight to the blind, to set at liberty those who are oppressed; to proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD." Then He closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant and sat down. And the eyes of all who were in the synagogue were fixed on Him. And He began to say to them, "Today this Scripture is fulfilled in your hearing."

Since, from the beginning, Coulter has melded religious faith and political policies, we will necessarily address the interplay between the two. For the purposes of our narrative, using broad strokes, the Christian Right can be likened to "*truth* Christians" who emphasize the truth of God, while the Christian Left can be likened to "*love* Christians" who accentuate the love aspect of the gospel. Broadly speaking, conservative Christians tend to emphasize truth over love and can appear legalistic and insensitive, while liberal Christians tend to emphasize love over truth and can become permissive and overly tolerant.

At the outset, it is appropriate to provide a biblical definition of "Christian." A Christian is a "little Christ" – one who has been spiritually reborn and is becoming like Christ. The apostle Paul wrote that Christians are simply those in whom Jesus dwells (Rom. 8:9-11,14-17).⁴ This scriptural definition cuts through the theological fog and ideological haze which has come to surround so many discussions about Christianity and it explicitly excludes political partisanship and many of the doctrinal disputes in which Christians can become embroiled in defining what it means to be a Christian.

In passing, it is also worth noting that Christians are not baptized into a political party, or even a specific church denomination. Rather, we are all baptized "in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit" (Mt. 28:19). Belief in Jesus Christ is the core doctrine of the New Covenant and He alone is the demarcation line between salvation and damnation. Any other claims of exclusivity are necessarily suspect.

What about Ann? If Coulter *is* a Christian, one is hard-pressed to grasp in what *way* she is a Christian. Her expressed beliefs are eclectic, contradictory, and largely un-exhibited in her life.⁵

In discussing the genuineness of liberals' faith, Coulter said, "It's up to God to decide [who's really a Christian]. I can't see into another person's heart. I consider these [liberal behaviors] warning signals."⁶

³ Pope Benedict XVI published an encyclical, "Caritas in Veritate" ("Love in Truth"), on 6/29/09. See http://www.vatican.va/holy_father/benedict_xvi/encyclicals/documents/hf_ben-xvi_enc_20090629_caritas-in-veritate_en.html. See also John MacArthur, *The Gospel According to Jesus*, Zondervan, 1988; Ron Carlson and Ed Decker, *Fast Facts on False Teachings*, Harvest House, 1994; and *The Compact Guide to World Religions*, ed. Dean C. Halverson, Bethany House, 1996.

⁴ See also 1st John 5:12, which states, "He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life."

⁵ One glaring example is her self-identification as a "mean Christian" – a biblical oxymoron. That Coulter *can* be "mean" is unquestioned; that she *is* a "Christian" is questioned.

⁶ Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

One can justly question whether Coulter's faith is merely by birth and pedigree or whether it is by choice and persuasion. To paraphrase author Jerome Corsi, the best evidence we have to judge by is first, the record of what Coulter has said and done, and second, what she has said about what she has said and done.⁷

Moreover, did Coulter's decision to become a Christian emulate that of Barack Obama's, which seemingly "came about as a choice and not an epiphany?"⁸

In referring to exposing religious cults, Coulter once declared "Sunshine is the best disinfectant."⁹ *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter* shines the light of truth upon Coulter's own unique view of Scripture, endeavoring to do so in a loving way. This book brings clarity from confusion, affirms orthodoxy, repudiates heresy, and rebukes hypocrisy.

⁷ Jerome R. Corsi, *The Obama Nation: Leftist Politics and the Cult of Personality*, Threshold Editions, 2008, pg. 187.

⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 188.

⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/29/97.

Chapter 1

Roots: Ann Coulter's Christian Heritage

“You will know them by their fruits. ... every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a bad tree bear good fruit. ... Therefore by their fruits you will know them.” – Matthew 7:16-20

Ann Coulter, Christian?

Many people have asked me whether Coulter is a Christian. Though no one can see into the heart of another, I tend to believe that she is a little lamb who has gone astray, who has lost her way, and doesn't even know (or refuses to believe) that she is lost.



In the midst of her *Godless* book tour in 2006, Coulter spoke at length about her religious beliefs in an interview with AOL: “Although my Christianity is somewhat more explicit in this book, Christianity fuels everything I write. Being a Christian means that I am called upon to do battle against lies, injustice, cruelty, hypocrisy – you know, all the virtues in the church of liberalism. As St. Paul said, if Christ is not risen from the dead, then eat drink and be merry, for tomorrow we die.”¹

Coulter continued, “I was raised Christian, but I’ve become more Christian in the past five or ten years, and one most transforming effect in my own life is that I’m constantly at peace. You don’t get upset about anything because, like I said, the big issue has been taken care of. Nothing else really matters.”

Coulter repeated her profession of faith on *Hannity & Colmes*, saying, “I’m a Christian and everything comes from being a Christian ... I do think Christianity fuels all of my books because you are called upon to behave in a certain way as a Christian and that is to fight lies, injustice, cruelty, hypocrisy, that fuels everything.”²

She used almost identical language in a *Human Events* interview: “Although my Christianity is somewhat more explicit in this book, Christianity fuels everything I write.”³

¹ Ann Coulter, AOL interview, 7/14/06, http://books.aol.com/feature/_a/license-to-be-bold/20060717101109990001, audio at http://aolradio.podcast.aol.com/books/aolbooks_anncoulter_071406.mp3.

² Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/6/06.

³ Lisa de Pasquale, “Exclusive Interview: Coulter Says Book Examines ‘Mental Disorder’ of Liberalism,” *Human Events*, 6/6/06.

During her *Demonic* book tour (2011), Coulter necessarily expounded upon her own, non-demonic, credentials. Her greatest personal influences, according to Coulter, were “Parents, brothers, and Jesus – not necessarily in that order.”⁴ Asked to prioritize the order, she said, “Obviously, Jesus has to be number one,” adding that she had “great Christian parents and great Christian brothers,” and concluding “ultimately all you have is God.”

Coulter’s Christian Heritage

Ann attended St. Aloysius Catholic School (K-8), enrolling in kindergarten just a few months prior to her sixth birthday. Although her father paid for her education at this private Catholic school, Ann attended Presbyterian services with her mother, at least until the sermons became too political. As Coulter would later say, “that’s not what most Christians want.”⁵ Her mother remained a member of the First Presbyterian Church of New Canaan until her death in 2009.

Consider the tensions of nine years of instruction at a private Catholic school reinforced by her Catholic father and eldest brother, while her mother and elder brother were Presbyterian. At some point, Ann chose to become a Presbyterian. She even admits, “I may have gone through a strutting atheist phase briefly.”⁶ But she now considers herself “a Protestant girl from Connecticut.”⁷ In fact, she seemingly regards her family as WASPs despite the identifying Catholicism of the patriarch and eldest son. She readily asserts, “I am a WASP.”⁸

It is a measure of Coulter’s internal ambivalence that though she rejected the Catholic faith of her father and eldest brother for the Presbyterianism of her mother, she would still, at every turn, defend the Catholic church against all enemies, within and without. Peace activists within were automatically among her prey. However, sex abuse scandals within the Catholic church would be vigorously *defended* by the daughter of a Catholic.⁹



⁴ Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

⁵ Ann Coulter, *Behind the Scenes*, TBN, 8/3/06.

⁶ Ann Coulter, *Booknotes*, C-Span, 7/10/02.

⁷ Ann Coulter, *Jewish Press*, 7/4/06.

⁸ George Gurley, *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

⁹ During her 2011 *Demonic* book tour, Coulter shed more light upon her religious roots, saying, “Three grandparents were Presbyterian, one was Catholic; but Catholicism is kind of a dominant gene. My father was Catholic, mother was Presbyterian – they almost didn’t get married because of that. And Mother signed papers that the children would all be brought up Catholic, so they were all baptized Catholic. But she is the one who raised us, so she ended up getting two of the three” (Ann Coulter, *First to Know*, TBN, 7/15/11). It is noteworthy that Coulter approves of her mother’s deception, just as she claims to admire former Gov. Mitt Romney (R-MA) for, in her view, “tricking” the citizens of Massachusetts into believing he’s a moderate when he’s not (according to her).

Still, her loyalty would never be to the universal church of God (the body of Christ as a whole) but to her own religious persuasion. Episcopalians are a frequent target for their non-traditional stance on political and cultural issues. Indeed, Coulter would come to deny the very existence of liberal Christianity, contending that liberals are, by definition, godless traitors.

Even the Church of England, which at one time upheld the cultural and familial values so cherished by Coulter, is dismissed by her as a church “founded on divorce,”¹⁰ irrespective of the personal faith of its adherents. Faithful members of the Church of England probably believe their church is founded on Jesus Christ.

The faith of her father is sacrosanct while the faith of the church fathers becomes profaned by Coulter’s words and behavior. What must Ann make of the various faiths and denominations of the Founding Fathers? Whom would she consider heretics? Traitors?

Puritan Blood and the Blood of Jesus

Ann is a Daughter of the American Revolution. In fact, she can trace her lineage back to the Puritans!

Born *literally* of Puritan blood, proud of her Puritan ancestry, and raised theologically and politically in a quasi-Puritan environment, Coulter found that being a Puritan is harder than it looks. It requires actually taking up one’s cross and following Him. It requires self-sacrifice, something abhorrent to one who is seemingly self-consumed. And it requires an active, living faith in the One who makes it all worthwhile.

So, what’s a girl to do?

Proclaim doctrines while twisting truth to enable one’s own hypocritical behavior. Create an ever-narrowing worldview which shuts out all opposing views to provide an emotional and spiritual safety zone. Engage in patterns of addictive thinking to deceive oneself and incorporate Orwellian propaganda techniques to deceive others. Lie, while claiming to speak the truth (see Chapter 8). Defame, while adopting the mantle of victimhood (see Chapter 8). Hate, while claiming hatred a good thing, and, simultaneously, asserting that the hatred is coming from others (see Chapter 7).

But, what’s a Christian to do? A Puritan to do?

Jesus instructed His disciples to take up their crosses and follow Him (not to go their own way). Jesus modeled the Christian life by yielding to God’s will, not His own will. We are told to walk the talk, to live righteously, and to repent whenever we transgress. The Christian life is one of transparency, of *being* the people we proclaim we *are*. We must put off the old man and put on the new, living a transformed life in Christ. Self-righteousness must yield to the righteousness of Jesus.

Sadly, Coulter missed the true significance of her Puritan heritage. The heart of a Puritan was one of piety and humility, honor and integrity, devotion to God and not to self. Seemingly enslaved to self, Coulter refuses to yield to God, yet she seeks the benefits of *appearing* godly and *proclaiming* godliness.

Evangelist John MacArthur observes, “But even the greatest human heritage cannot match our heritage in Christ (Rom. 8:17). After all, what can compare to being a child of God?”¹¹

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/11/97. Coulter: “But this is a church that was *founded* on divorce!”

¹¹ See March 15 (“The Prize of Peace – Eternal Sonship”), John MacArthur, *Grace for Today: Daily Readings from the Life of Christ, Volume 1*, Moody, 2008.

In defending Mel Gibson's *The Passion of the Christ*, Coulter transformed the gospel of living a transformed life into one of judging who will die. Mocking the evangelical acronym WWJD (What Would Jesus Do?), Coulter created her own acronym, WWJK (Whom Would Jesus Kill?), missing the whole point of the movie and the theology she was defending. It is the blood of Jesus, not Puritan blood, which gives life, and it is His life within us which yields the abundant life and empowers us to live righteously.

As we will see, Coulter squeezes her religious beliefs into her rigid political template instead of adapting her political paradigm to fit into her faith template. Instead of letting faith inform politics, Coulter has *politicized* faith itself, subordinating it to partisan purposes.

Consequently, Coulter is quick to subordinate biblical principles for partisan purposes or to further her personal and professional pursuits.¹²

Coulter's Quandary

In discussing a 1997 *Time* survey which showed that 67% of Americans believe they can get to heaven on deeds and behavior alone, Coulter accurately stated the centrality of the gospel message: "That is so antithetical to Christianity, the idea deeds and behavior alone get you into Heaven. The key thing here is Christ!"¹³ One month later, she affirmed a core Christian doctrine: "Christ is the Savior."¹⁴

Ironically, when asked in 2001, "Would you claim that you are a religious person?" Coulter's lackluster response – "Yeah, I suppose I'm a Christian, it's just not like I'm constantly writing about it and thinking about it"¹⁵ – seemed doubting, uncertain, and quite at odds with her later claim that "Christianity fuels everything I write."

Four years earlier, she described the "type" of Christian she is with these words: "I do believe in heaven. I'm what C.S. Lewis called 'the worst sort of Christian.' I believe enough to feel really miserable about not being a saint, and not enough to actually be a saint. So I'm just sort of miserable all the time."¹⁶

Perhaps that explains her intent to reject any divine revelation from God: "If God himself came down from heaven and told me these cops intentionally murdered Amadou Diallo knowing he was unarmed, I would not believe it."¹⁷ Seemingly no one offered any objection to her apostasy.



¹² For greater insight into Coulter's family and religious origins, see "Chapter 1: The Seduction of Ann Coulter," in my free PDF book, [The Beauty of Conservatism](http://www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf), which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

¹³ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/23/97.

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/13/97.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, *Columbia Spectator*, 12/5/01.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/23/97.

¹⁷ Ann Coulter, "A liberal lynching," 2/16/00.

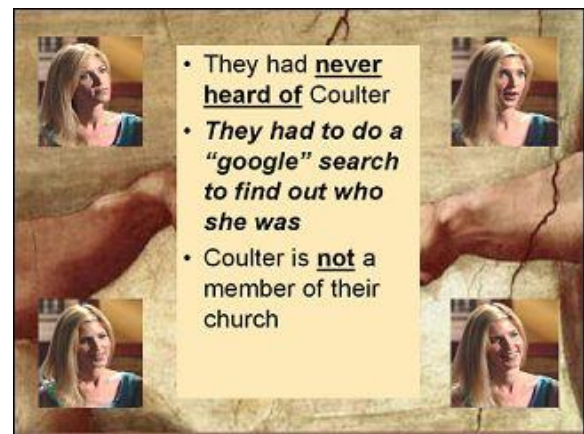
But one year after 9/11, Coulter offered a snarky response to the question, “What are your religious views?” Coulter replied, “Christian, or as *People* magazine put it, ‘devout Christian.’ (In liberal code this evidently means I actually believe in God.)”¹⁸ No longer did Coulter feel “miserable about not being a saint,” nor was she averse to denigrating those without faith – or those of a faith different from her own.

In that same interview, she was asked, “What inspires you to do political commentary?” Coulter answered, “I love America, God, and truth, and I hate liars.”¹⁹ Two years later, under fire for documented errors and outright fabrications in her work, Coulter reaffirmed her belief in her own accuracy. She further opined that her “love of God and country” inspires her work: “I’m still waiting for my detractors (of any stripe) to identify the inaccuracies in my book that would lead them to conclude that I went ‘overboard.’ However, I am no longer holding my breath.”²⁰ (Some of those “inaccuracies” are addressed in this book.)

In 2005, Coulter even claimed membership in Redeemer Presbyterian Church, but no one there had ever heard of her.²¹ Finally, in 2006, Coulter declared, “I’m an extraordinarily good Christian.”²² In contrast, the apostle Paul, writer of most the New Testament, humbly described himself as “the least of the apostles” (1 Cor. 15:9). At about the same time, Coulter claimed to be “a mean Christian.”²³ Kind of misses the point of Jesus’ birth, death, and resurrection – doesn’t it?

The following year, she wrote, “I’m a Christian first and a mean-spirited, bigoted conservative second, and don’t you ever forget it. You know who else was kind of ‘divisive’ in terms of challenging the status quo and the powers-that-be of his day? Jesus Christ.”²⁴

As she would do ever more frequently post-9/11, Coulter likens herself to Jesus Christ in order to deflect criticism of her and to justify her own behavior. She has yet to give a single instance where Jesus was perceived to be “mean-spirited” and “bigoted.” What an odd contention for a professing Christian to make!



Coulter’s checkered Christianity is evident from her sand-shifting views concerning her Creator and His church. Early in her career as a pundit (1996-97), she frequently spoke of God and the importance of Christianity. During the Clinton impeachment saga, Coulter denied the very existence of the Christian Left (a position she holds to even today). During the 2000 election cycle, she denounced the Religious Right as fascists for seeking a constitutional solution to abortion. Then, in *Slander* (2002), Coulter denied the very existence of the Religious Right. Yet, for more than a decade she has insisted that she herself is a member of the Religious Right. Are you confused? Coulter certainly is.²⁵

¹⁸ Ann Coulter interview, *World*, 10/5/02. http://www.worldmag.com/world/issue/10-05-02/cultural_4.asp.

¹⁹ *Ibid.*

²⁰ Interview by Jamie Glazov, *Front Page Magazine*, 1/12/04, <http://www.frontpagemag.com/Articles/ReadArticle.asp?ID=11689>.

²¹ Max Blumenthal, “‘Godless’ author Coulter unknown at church she claims to attend,” *Raw Story*, 6/8/06. Details confirmed by author interview with spokesman for Redeemer Presbyterian Church.

²² “Church Militant: Ann Coulter on God, Faith, and Liberals,” beliefnet.com, 2006, http://www.beliefnet.com/story/196/story_19646.html.

²³ George Wayne, “She’d Rather be Right – Ann Coulter: The extreme interview,” *Vanity Fair*, June 2006, pg. 120.

²⁴ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pp. 77-78.

²⁵ See also my documentary, “[The Gospel of Ann](http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/The%20Gospel%20of%20Ann.wmv),” Citizens for Principled Conservatism, 2005, <http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/The%20Gospel%20of%20Ann.wmv> and <http://www.bradblog.com/?p=1940>.

Chapter 2

Faith: Once Delivered for All

“Beloved, while I was very diligent to write to you concerning our common salvation, I found it necessary to write to you exhorting you to contend earnestly for the faith which was once for all delivered to the saints.” – Jude 3

The Gospel

From the birth of the church on Pentecost to this very day, Christians everywhere have had to earnestly contend for the faith once delivered. False doctrines (heresy) almost immediately sprang up. Accurate doctrines accompanied by wrong behavior (hypocrisy) continually pose problems for the church and for individual Christians due to our human nature operating in a fallen world.¹

Before Jesus ascended into heaven, He gave His famous commission to the Church: “All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth. Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age” (Mt. 28:18-20).

His message is called the gospel of *Christ* (Gal. 1:6-9, 2 Cor. 2:12), the gospel of *peace* (Eph. 6:15), the gospel of *salvation* (Eph. 1:13), the gospel of the *kingdom of God* (Mt. 24:14), and the gospel of the *grace of God* (Acts 20:24).

These are all components of the message Jesus commissioned His disciples to teach. The gospel, first and foremost, is from, by, and through Jesus Christ. It offers the good news of how people can be at peace with God and with one another. It speaks of salvation through Jesus Christ, into whose kingdom we are translated by the grace of God.

Although zealously expressed, Coulter’s own theology is a disturbing mixture of orthodoxy, hypocrisy, and heresy.

Orthodoxy

Coulter’s orthodoxy extends to acknowledging the existence of a Creator and professing the sovereignty of God, the authority of Scripture, the sanctity of human life and marriage, and atonement for sins through Jesus’ sacrifice. While observing the *salvational* aspects of Jesus’ sacrifice, she rarely notes the *transformational* power inherent in the resurrected life of Christ.



¹ See Charles W. Colson, *The Faith: What Christians Believe, Why They Believe It, and Why It Matters*, Zondervan, 2008, and John MacArthur, *Why Believe the Bible?*, Regal, 1980, and Gary DeMar, *War of the Worldviews: A Christian Defense Manual*, American Vision, 1994, and Thomas Sowell, *A Conflict of Visions: Ideological Origins of Political Struggles*, William Morris, 1987.

Quick to defend the Catholic church regarding any controversy, Coulter once correctly observed that the integrity of the Catholic church's stand on key doctrinal matters, while taking jabs at the Church of England: "Why do you have no ordination of women, no abortion, no divorce? Well, that's the church, and if you don't like the church, go be like Henry VIII and start your own. Go have your eight wives. ... [for Christians] you're supposed to look and see, what you think, how you should live your life under Christ."²

On another occasion, she opined, "I'm not a Catholic – but, [standing up for principles is] something that's admirable about the Catholic church."³ Coulter added, "If it's true, it's true, and it's not just some consciousness-raising rap session. ... What the Church is supposed to tell you – or religion is supposed to tell you – is how to behave in your particular life." As Coulter (and every Christian everywhere) would soon find out, *knowing* what is right and *doing* what is right are two entirely different things.

Hypocrisy

While upholding the standards of the Catholic church, Coulter frequently minimized and discounted the recent sexual abuse and pedophilia scandals from which the church had to repent.

The Catholic church is universally recognized for its charity and its commitment to traditional standards of morality and human relationships. It, like every human institution⁴ (and every Christian denomination) is flawed. The biblical patriarchs, Moses and David, and the apostles were all flawed individuals, yet God did mighty works through them. God exposed their flaws to reveal His glory. And in the process, He strengthened and healed them. The Catholic church is no exception and those sex abuse scandals have proven among the most notable failures of the contemporary church.⁵

Ironically, in denying the sin, Coulter denies the need for a Savior. Sins are irredeemable until they are brought to the foot of the cross. Once confessed, forgiveness and healing take place and the redeemed become powerful witnesses for Christ. These principles are applicable individually, collectively, and institutionally. Short-circuiting this redemptive process stunts spiritual growth and, in effect, denies the redemption which is found in Christ and Christ alone.

A standard-bearer for the traditional family and traditional values, Coulter once boasted of her "total slutty look"⁶ and the appropriateness of having serial sexual relationships ("Let's say I go out every night, I meet a guy and have sex with him. Good for me. I'm not married").⁷

A proponent of truth-telling and opponent of hate speech, Coulter readily employs lies and ad hominem in her work. In one telling radio interview,⁸ Coulter declared "Lying is never OK," but then, when asked

² Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/25/97. Actually, Henry VIII had six, not eight, wives.

³ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/30/97.

⁴ The universal church, known as the body of Christ, encompasses all Christians everywhere in a mystical union with the Triune God. While every church is a "human institution" in the sense that they are all populated exclusively by human beings (and thus subject to human frailties), each is also a divine institution in that they are all relationally-connected to the godhead. Paradoxically, while God is transforming all Christians into the image of Jesus Christ, who is head of the Church, He allows each of us (and each fellowship) to be "human" in our weaknesses, at times permitting error to temporarily prevail, with the end goal of ultimately aiding our spiritual transformation. God did not prevent the heroes of the faith from having wrong attitudes and behaviors; He corrected them in love and directed them to a healthier relationship with the One upon whom they would ever more completely rely.

⁵ For an excellent analysis of the impact and scope to those scandals, see Chapter 16 (Catholic Scandal Series Snuffed) of George Archibald's *Journalism is War: Stories of Power Politics, Sexual Dalliance and Corruption in the Nation's Capital*, Anomalos Publishing House, 2009.

⁶ Ann Coulter, quoted by Toby Harnden, "I love to pick fights with liberals," *Daily Telegraph*, 7/19/02.

⁷ Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 6/7/00.

⁸ Ann Coulter, *Jerry Hughes Show*, 2/5/99.

“What are your views on honesty and civility in political discourse and personal relationships?” she abruptly asserted “I’m against it!”

Most hypocritically, while condemning hypocrisy on the left, Coulter invariably justifies hypocrisy by Christians and conservatives, saying “At least we have standards,” thus totally missing the point of the *purpose* of standards and the *dangers* of hypocrisy itself (see Chapter 12).

Heresy

As for heresy, Coulter frequently turns the gospel on its head (see Chapter 13). In her impassioned defense of Mel Gibson’s controversial movie, *The Passion of the Christ*, Coulter inexplicably denied the very purpose of Jesus’ passion by treating the Golden Rule as virtually irrelevant in human relationships and by titling one essay “WWJK: Whom Would Jesus Kill?” – when the entire purpose of Jesus’ sacrificial love exhibited on the cross was to *save* humanity.

The apostle of love, John, wrote, “Whoever claims to live in him must live as Jesus did” (1st John 2:6 NIV).

Chapter 3

Creator: Author and Finisher of Everything

“looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and has sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.” – Hebrews 12:2

Creator: Jesus Makes All Things New

In Romans chapter 1, the apostle Paul wrote of the three-fold revelation of God as Creator. First, creation itself testifies of a Creator. Second, the spirit in man discerns and yearns for a relationship with the Creator. Philosopher Blaise Pascal wrote of this God-shaped void in the human heart which can only be filled by God. Third, the Word of God, in Scripture, in the person of Jesus Christ, and in the revelation of the Holy Spirit, reveals God and the deeper, spiritual things of God.

Scripture provides a seamless narrative thread which reveals God, in the beginning, as Creator of the physical and spiritual realms, and, with the inauguration of the Church on Pentecost, as the Author and Finisher of a new creation: God transforming His children into the very image of His Son, Jesus Christ.

We read in John 1:1-3, “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made.” In John chapter 3, Jesus speaks of God’s children being born *again* into the kingdom of God. That rebirth is a *spiritual* creation.

Finally, the apostle Paul emphasizes the preeminence of Christ, writing, “He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him. And He is before all things, and in Him all things consist” (Col. 1:15-17).¹

America was birthed in an ethos of reverence for God. Her Founding Fathers almost to a man believed in a providential Creator. Her charter, the Declaration of Independence, speaks of all men being created equal possessing inalienable rights endowed by a Creator.²

Coulter Extols Creator, Defends Creation

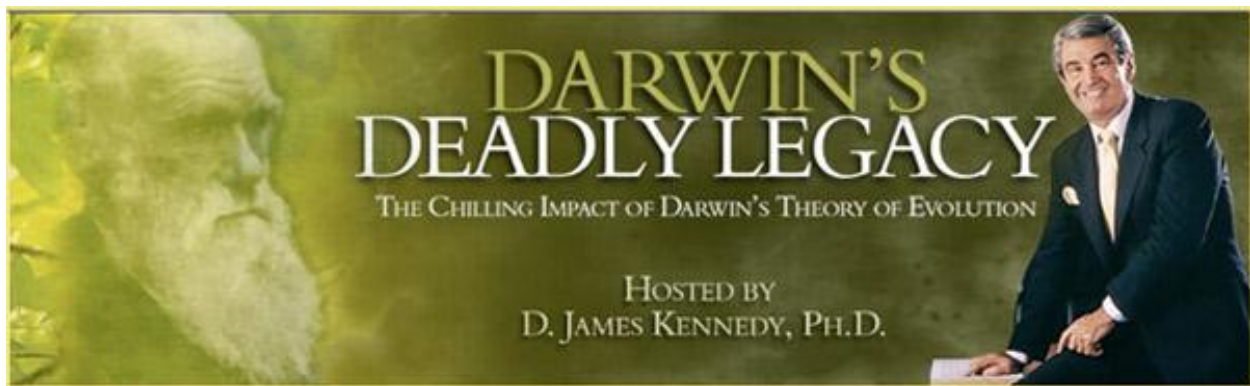
In the mid-1990s, Coulter observed that traditional national monuments, such as the Lincoln and Jefferson Memorials, are “suffused with the idea of God and our Maker.”³ In debates over character

¹ See Lee Strobel, *The Case for a Creator: A Journalist Investigates Scientific Evidence That Points Toward God*, Zondervan, 2004. An abundance of worship songs extol God as Creator, including Carrie Underwood’s *How Great Thou Art* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nhvaDJTUmRU>) reverently worships our Creator and Redeemer; Chris Tomlin’s *God of Wonders* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=OmuT-907oZ4>) praises the “Lord of all creation, of water, earth, and sky,” proclaiming that “the heavens are [His] tabernacle” and that “the universe declares [His] majesty”; Tomlin’s *Indescribable* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7PTvr755V8s>) poetically speaks of the Creator “who imagined the sun and gives source to its light, yet conceals it to bring us the coolest of nights”; and Avalon’s *Adonai* (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ji_i3fhfFWI&feature=fvst) describes a benevolent and loving Creator who is “out beyond the furthest morning star,” yet “close enough to hold [us] in [His] arms.”

² See Gary DeMar’s American Vision (<http://americanvision.org/>), David Barton’s Wall Builders (<http://www.wallbuilders.com/>), and the Providence Forum (<http://www.providenceforum.org/>) for a wealth of historical documents and original materials from that period.

education, she exclaimed, “I just can’t really see how you can teach values separate from God.”⁴ Coulter also observed, “we’re now living off of the moral capital of the last two centuries of this country. It was really an incredibly novel concept this idea that our Creator endowed us with inalienable rights. That’s what mutual respect comes from.” She added, “We all have these inalienable rights that come from the Creator.” She further clarified, “I’m talking about the Creator. I’m talking about our religion, this country’s founding religion.”⁵

Coulter devoted several chapters of her 2006 bestseller, *Godless*, to debunking evolution and she frequently writes and speaks on that subject. In fact, she became an “expert” for Coral Ridge Ministries’ DVD documentary, *Darwin’s Deadly Legacy*. The producers were seemingly unaware of the incongruity of Coulter espousing a link between Darwinism and the Nazi’s dehumanizing Final Solution when she herself has a propensity to engage in using Orwellian techniques of hate speech, character assassination, elimination rhetoric, and dehumanization of anyone who disagrees with her (see Chapter 11 and Appendix 1).⁶



Inevitably, Coulter came under attack for speaking the truth about evolution, though she was wrong in stating that anyone who believes in evolution is *necessarily* godless. She ignores the growing number of Christians and theologians who embrace *theistic* evolution as a possible means by which God created the universe.

It is worth pointing out that Christians who embrace theistic evolution overlook key aspects of Scripture. According to the inspired God-breathed, Word of God, God breathed life into Adam after forming him from lifeless dirt.⁷ Second, humanity’s creation in God’s image precludes an evolution from another life form. Finally, as pointed out so ably by theologian John MacArthur:

³ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 12/1/96.

⁴ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/2/97.

⁵ The Supreme Court has consistently affirmed the United States to be “a Christian country” (*Vidal v. Girard’s Executors*, 43 U. S. 127, 198 (1844)) and “a Christian nation” (*Church of the Holy Trinity v. U. S.*, 143 U. S. 471 (1892) (see <http://vftonline.org/EndTheWall/TrinityHistory.htm>). Moreover, in 1854, The House Judiciary Committee declared the then recognize self-evident truth that “In this age there can be no substitution for Christianity ... That was the religion of the founders of the republic, and they expected it to remain the religion of their descendants.” – *Reports of Committees of the House of Representatives Made During the First Session of the Thirty-Third Congress*, Nicholson, 1854, pp. 6,8. Many forget the distinction between a nation and a government. That a *nation* or its cultural institutions may be Christian in nature does not mean that its *government* is or should be.

⁶ See also my free PDF book, [The Beauty of Conservatism](http://www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf), which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf. Notwithstanding Coulter’s inclusion in *Darwin’s Deadly Legacy*, a valid case is made for the danger of negative consequences arising whenever the creation divorces itself from its Creator.

⁷ This is a key theological point: Adam and Eve were created from *lifeless* matter into which God breathed life. Paralleling the physical creation, God breathes spiritual life into spiritually-*dead* human beings who are “born again” – given new life in Christ.

“... if Adam was not the literal ancestor of the entire human race, then the Bible’s explanation of how sin entered the world is impossible to make sense of. Moreover, if we didn’t fall in Adam, we cannot be redeemed in Christ, because Christ’s position as the Head of the redeemed race exactly parallels Adam’s position as the head of the fallen race.”⁸ (See 1st Cor. 15:22, 45 and Rom 5:18-19.)

Having said that, Coulter effectively refutes the theory of evolution using facts and sound reasoning provided by experts, and propounds the much more logical and scientifically-valid Intelligent Design theory,⁹ which simply states that the very existence of a creation necessarily implies a Creator. For example, the intricate design of a complex clock with interworking mechanisms coordinated to produce specific results necessarily leads to the notion of a *clockmaker*.¹⁰

Nevertheless, belief in Intelligent Design and disbelief of evolution are *not* salvational issues. The core, central, pivotal, consequential issue is whether an individual believes in and accepts Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior (John 3:16).

Coulter condemns those who worship the creation while denying the Creator. Ironically, while mindful of her Lord and Savior, Coulter still distorts His words of instruction to mankind regarding the Earth: husbandry, not savagery. Even while acknowledging the Creator’s craftsmanship over His creation, Coulter somehow presumes that He would have us *abuse* that which He created. She infamously asserted, “God gave us the earth. We have dominion over the plants, the animals, the trees. God said, ‘Earth is yours. Take it. Rape it. It’s yours.’”¹¹

Nearly a decade later, Coulter reaffirmed her perspective: “The ethic of conservation is the explicit abnegation of man’s dominion over the Earth. The lower species are here for our use. God said so: Go forth, be fruitful, multiply, and rape the planet – it’s yours. That’s our job: drilling, mining and stripping. Sweaters are the anti-Biblical view. Big gas-guzzling cars with phones and CD players and wet bars – that’s the Biblical view.”¹²

As we shall see, Coulter regularly turns the biblical perspective upside down, with few objections from those who should know better.

⁸ *Think Biblically! Recovering a Christian Worldview*, ed. John MacArthur, Crossway Books, 2003, pg. 62.

⁹ For an excellent synopsis of Intelligent Design Theory, see Scott Klusendorf, *The Case for Life: Equipping Christians to Engage the Culture*, Crossway Books, 2009, pp. 116-122. See also Hank Hanegraff, *Christianity in Crisis*, Harvest House, 1997, pp. 367-368, and Timothy Keller, *The Reason for God: Belief in an Age of Skepticism*, Dutton Adult, 2008, pp. 87-88, 92-95, 135-139, 147-148.

¹⁰ A worthwhile documentary, *Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed* (2008), examines the evolutionary reactionaries within academia who rail against any deviance from Darwinian orthodoxy.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/20/01. The opposite extreme is represented by this quote from Chief Joseph – “We do not own the earth, the earth owns us” – which suggests an element of earth worship. The proper biblical perspective is in the middle, recognizing that the earth belongs to God (Exodus 19:5; Psalm 89:11) and He has given us *stewardship* over it (Genesis 1:26-30). In other words, mankind can use the earth resources *responsibly*.

¹² Ann Coulter, “Oil Good: Democrats Bad,” 10/11/00. See also <http://geochristian.wordpress.com/2010/11/26/did-ann-coulter-really-say-earth-is-yours-take-it-rape-it-its-yours/>.

Chapter 4

Forgiveness: Required For All Believers

“For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.” – Matthew 6:14-15

Forgiveness: Given and Commanded

The next three chapters deal with a trio of related doctrines: forgiveness, redemption, and transformation. Forgiveness levels the playing field for all of us. In modern vernacular, it is a reset button which removes the guilt from past errors and sins. Redemption (chapter 5) and transformation (chapter 6) build upon that foundation in God’s plan for creating a redeemed and transformed people into the image of His Son.

Every human being is descended from Adam and Eve who sinned in the Garden of Eden. Consequently, we all inherently possess a fallen human nature which is naturally predisposed to sin (Rom. 3:23). Our sins, however great or small, earn a spiritual, eternal penalty: death (Rom. 6:23). But God, our Creator, always had a solution prepared beforehand – the sacrifice of His Son, Jesus Christ, in our place – that He might give us eternal life (Rom. 6:23, 1 Cor. 15:22,45, Acts 13:38)!

The heart of God is one of forgiveness and that heart is both desired and required for His children (Mt. 6:14;18:21-22,35). God’s forgiveness is *complete*, so much so that our sins are eternally forgotten (Heb. 8:12;10:17-18) and his forgiveness is both *cleansing* and *continual* (1 John 1:9).¹

It is through Christ’s sacrifice that God can forgive us and bring us into eternal fellowship with Him (Col. 1:13-14;2:13). As a consequence, we should readily bear with and forgive one another (Col. 3:13).² Jesus told a touching story of a sinful woman who was forgiven much and, consequently, loved much (Luke 7:36-50). In the Parable of the Prodigal Son (Luke 15:11-32), Jesus provided an analogy for how *eager* our Father in heaven is to forgive every one of His children, if we would but seek His forgiveness.³

Humility is a hallmark of a mature Christian, as is a spirit of *confession* (Jas. 5:16, 1 John 1:9). As theologian Philip Yancey observes, “Besides being good theology, confession makes for good psychology.”⁴ Confession and forgiveness lead to guilt being “dissolved,” thus humility is “a necessary step to the healing.”⁵ Beloved theologian C.S. Lewis got to the core of forgiveness: “To be a Christian means to forgive the inexcusable, because God has forgiven the inexcusable in you.”⁶

¹ See John MacArthur, *A Tale of Two Sons: The Inside Story of a Father, His Sons, and a Shocking Murder*, Thomas Nelson, 2008, and Charles Stanley, *The Gift of Forgiveness*, Thomas Nelson, 1987.

² Barlow Girl’s *Sweet Revenge* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5K7x18xZ3mk>) depicts an internal battle between vengeance and forgiveness, with the realization that only forgiveness leads to freedom: “I find I can’t get free till I release this vengeance that I seek ... ‘Cause setting you free means my freedom too.” On the other hand, Miley Cyrus’s *Forgiveness and Love* (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=f62palKX_3M) pledges the titular traits irrespective of the other persons behavior. Miley asserts “the only thing real when push comes to shove are the acts of forgiveness and love.” In *The Heart of the Matter* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rZKuRr-yI0k&hd=1>), *The Eagles* repeatedly emphasize “forgiveness” – “even if you don’t love me anymore.”

³ See T.D. Jakes, *Let It Go: Forgive Others, So You Can Be Forgiven*, Atria Books, 2012, <http://tdjakes.org/letitgo/>.

⁴ Philip Yancey, *Prayer: Does It Make Any Difference?*, Zondervan, 2006, pg. 32.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 33.

⁶ C.S. Lewis, *Fern-seed and Elephants*, Fount Books, 1975, pg. 43.

Coulter on Forgiveness

In a rare instance, Coulter surprisingly wrote of the softer aspects of the gospel of Christ, simply stating, “we believe in things like mercy and pity and forgiveness and hope.”⁷ Yet, Coulter refuses to forgive, let alone love, her enemies.⁸ Note the following exchange with Bill O’Reilly:⁹

O'REILLY: OK, but you've taken [Sen. John] McCain. You don't think he has a chance for the nomination?

COULTER: No.

O'REILLY: The immigration thing killed him, right?

COULTER: Well, not only that. Speaking of tonight's topic, when he viciously and without provocation attacked Jerry Falwell and Pat Robertson...

O'REILLY: But then he went, then he made up with them, though. He walked down ...

COULTER: OK. They forgive him, I don't.

O'REILLY: OK. You're a Christian, you have to. Come on.

COULTER: I'm reconsidering “the love your enemies” part.

Is McCain really her enemy? Aren’t liberals and terrorists enough to wage battle against? If Coulter’s goal is evangelical outreach, why is she so polemical? So unforgiving? So offensive? (See chapter 9 for insight into those questions.) If Coulter cannot forgive someone *politically*, how can she forgive someone *personally* – someone who has actually personally harmed her?

In 1996, Coulter chimed in to denounce Louis Farrakhan’s Million Man March, stating, “you atone for your own sins.”¹⁰ But then she praised the Dr. Jekyll aspect of Farrakhan’s ministry, saying, “when he is being spiritual and uniting people, it seems to me his message has been – which is an unusual message – ‘Don’t go around pointing fingers at other people. You are responsible for yourself. You are going to take responsibility for yourself.’”

Forgiving Oneself

Forgiveness matters to God because its impact cannot be overemphasized. God’s forgiveness of us is cleansing, complete, and continual. To achieve complete cleansing – to be fully healed intellectually, emotionally, and spiritually – we need to exhibit humility and confession, which lead to a clear conscience. Moreover, to receive the full effects of forgiveness, we need to forgive others and to forgive ourselves.

Forgiveness can at times a tricky thing. Sometimes, we can accept God’s forgiveness, yet not forgive ourselves, thus continually bearing our guilt and shame even after He has removed it. Often, those who cannot forgive themselves cannot forgive others. A key to understanding Coulter’s commentary lies in an interview in *Salon* magazine. For a fascinating glimpse into Coulter’s soul, consider her take on *The Brothers Karamazov*:

⁷ Ann Coulter, Foreword for Rev. Donald Wildmon, *Speechless: Silencing the Christians*, Pathway Book Service, 2009, pg. xix.

⁸ For greater insight on forgiveness, see my sermon, “[Living the Resurrected Life](http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3),” which can be obtained at <http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3>.

⁹ *O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 10/15/07, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,302437,00.html>.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 10/13/96.

... one of the greatest lines, the drunken old angry father says of someone who hates him, “He did me a bad turn and I can forgive him, but he will always hate me because he did me a bad turn.” That is completely true. People can forgive you, but they can never forgive themselves. And they hate to be reminded if they’ve screwed you.¹¹

Inescapable questions emerge: what can’t Coulter forgive herself for and whom has she screwed?

No Regrets – Ever

Coulter insists that she herself has not changed (because change would necessitate admitting past imperfection): “I have friends I went to summer camp with who say I haven’t changed in that respect. I’ve always talked this way, and I always will.”¹² Ironically, Coulter only regrets being nice: “I’ve never said anything so outrageous that I regret it. Though I’ve regretted things that were too tame.”¹³ Moreover, Coulter says, “This is the shocking thing for your readers: I believe everything I say.”¹⁴

When asked if she regretted any of her more controversial remarks, Coulter replied: “You can quote anything I’ve said back to me and ask me if I have reservations, if I would have done it differently, if I would have said it differently, do I have any regrets. The answer is no!”¹⁵ Asked if there was “anything, anywhere, anytime, that you wrote, said or thought that you now sincerely wish you hadn’t?” Coulter joked, “Yes, a college exam once on which I got a C-plus.”¹⁶

Expressions of regret or contrition, and admissions of change, would require an acknowledgement of either growth or of decline. If growth, then an admission of prior imperfection is necessary, and for a person for whom flaws are anathema, such an admission is unthinkable. If decline, then those very flaws are growing worse. In either case, admission of warts and wrinkles is emotionally and psychologically unacceptable to a person who must appear perfect. Consequently, Coulter’s ego and her wounds impede her personal growth.



“My Only Regret ...”

Although Coulter admits to no regrets, she has a penchant for using a formulaic and bizarre literary construction (“My only regret is”) to make polemical points. For instance, she said, “My only regret with

¹¹ David Bowman, “Ann Coulter, Woman,” *Salon*, 7/25/03.

¹² Ann Coulter, “Coulter, sweetly disemboweling the left wing,” *Philadelphia Inquirer*, 7/30/03.

¹³ Lynda Wright, “Ms. Right,” *People*, 7/29/02, pg. 107.

¹⁴ “Ann Coulter: The blond assassin,” *The Independent*, 8/16/04, <http://news.independent.co.uk/people/profiles/article52029.ece>, accessed 9/19/07.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, *The Mike Rosen Show*, KOA News Radio 850.

¹⁶ Bill Steigerwald, *Tribune-Review*, 10/17/04.

Timothy McVeigh is he did not go to the *New York Times* Building.”¹⁷ Later she clarified her remark, “‘Of course I regret it. I should have added, ‘after everyone had left the building except the editors and reporters.’”¹⁸

Speaking before a large, conservative audience, Coulter said, “When contemplating college liberals, you really regret once again that John Walker is not getting the death penalty. We need to execute people like John Walker in order to physically intimidate liberals, by making them realize that they can be killed, too. Otherwise, they will turn out to be outright traitors.”¹⁹

That remark was later clarified as follows: “Only [regret is] that I didn't say it loud enough and in a large enough public forum. And when I said we should ‘execute’ John Walker Lindh, I mis-spoke. What I meant to say was ‘We should burn John Walker Lindh alive and televise it on prime-time network TV.’ My apologies for any misunderstanding that might have occurred.”²⁰

In another instance, Coulter began a column attacking Deep Throat with these words: “My only regret is that Mark Felt did not rat out Nixon because he was ticked off about rapprochement with China or detente with the Soviets.”²¹

These literary constructions are truly bizarre. Who uses the word “regret” when talking about some *else’s* behavior? Regrets are typically inward and personal, not outward and pejorative.

Impenitent Spirit

On *Scarborough Country*,²² a repentance-challenged Coulter refused to acknowledge any errors whatsoever and opined that even asking her to retract anything was beyond the pale:

SCARBOROUGH: So I want to talk about the media firestorm you've been in the past couple of weeks. And I want to start with the question, is there anything that you've said about the 9-11 widows or on any other subject that you wish you could have taken – you wish you could take back or that you may have measured your words more carefully with, or do you stand by everything you've said?

COULTER: Are you seriously asking that question? Do you want to retract that question?

A few weeks later, Coulter was asked if she ever admitted when she was wrong. She affirmed that she does (“Yeah. When I'm wrong, I admit I'm wrong”) but then insisted her treatment of the



¹⁷ George Gurley, “Coultergeist,” *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

¹⁸ Ann Coulter, Right Wing News, <http://www.rightwingnews.com/interviews/coulteriffic.php>.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, CPAC 2002, 2/26/02.

²⁰ Ann Coulter, Right Wing News, <http://www.rightwingnews.com/interviews/coulteriffic.php>.

²¹ Ann Coulter, “Woodward Does Washington,” 6/8/05.

²² *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 6/26/06.

9/11 widows was appropriate (“and I’m hearing from a lot of them who think I wasn’t harsh enough.”)²³ Her words weren’t “harsh enough?” What would Jesus say? (See chapter 8 for an analysis of her defamation of those “McWidows” and the moral deterioration which ensued.)

In her eyes, Coulter is never wrong and never repents. On 5/4/12, Coulter posted a series of tweets which ridiculed Chinese dissident Chen Guangcheng’s blindness (isn’t he one of the *good* guys?), displaying both tastelessness and impenitence. To wit, Coulter joked “Couldn’t we just tell that blind Chinese dissident that he’s in America now?” Under fire, Coulter said, “Wow. I felt worse about making light of Communist hellholes known for slaughtering their own people, but it still made me laugh.” Attacking her critics, including those from the National Federation for the Blind, Coulter added, “I’d say they’re a little myopic, except they’d be offended.”²⁴

Forgiveness originates with God and should be extended to others and to ourselves. Confession and repentance are key factors in receiving and giving forgiveness. As we will see, an impenitent and unforgiving spirit thwarts spiritual growth, prevents redemption to the depths of one’s being from taking place, and inhibits spiritual transformation.

Unforgiving people are often judgmental and self-righteous. Unforgiveness leads to self-righteousness and judgmentalism. Forgiveness, on the other hand, is the means by which God redeems his people, enables their souls to receive healing, and empowers them to pursue righteousness.

²³ Ann Coulter, *Hardball with Chris Matthews*, MSNBC, 7/14/06.

²⁴ Hunter Walker, “Ann Coulter Responds To Furor Over Her Blind Man Joke By Making More Blind Man Jokes,” www.Politicker.com, 5/4/12.

Chapter 5

Redemption: The Power Of His Blood

“In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace.” – Ephesians 1:7

What the Locust Has Eaten

The previous chapter addressed the issue of forgiveness, the starting point for any relationship with God and the impetus for the development of spiritual growth. Redemption takes us deeper, removing the shame of the past (and of who we *are*) and gradually taking away the causes of sin in our lives. The next chapter (transformation) focuses on the end result of these processes.

The *Catholic Encyclopedia* defines redemption as “The restoration of man from the bondage of sin to the liberty of the children of God through the satisfactions and merits of Christ.”¹ Thus, redemption involves more than forgiveness of sin, it encompasses restoration, renewal, and liberty.

The apostle Peter tells us we were “cleansed from our old sins” (2 Pet. 1:9). The writer of Hebrews reminds us that God is able to save *completely* (Heb. 7:25). The psalmist declares, “with the LORD is unfailing love and with him is full redemption” (Ps. 130:7). Not only does God “deliver us from this present evil age” (Gal. 1:4), He also *restores* to us “the years that the swarming locust has eaten” (Joel 2:25) and He will “purify us from all unrighteousness” (1 John 1:9).

The recurring theme of Scripture is salvation, restoration, renewal.² I believe *with my whole heart* that God can reach down and redeem *any* human being and that faith in our Father who can do all things informs my *entire worldview*.³

After all, Jesus chose Simon the Zealot – a terrorist – as one of His apostles. Simon was transformed into a Christian missionary. Saul, who once zealously persecuted the church, became Paul, the most prolific New Testament writer. Peter, who thrice denied Christ out of fear for his life, after receiving the Holy Spirit on Pentecost, boldly proclaimed Christ to the very people who had condemned his Savior. *Amazing Grace* was written by John Newton, a former slave ship captain. In our era, a notorious serial killer, David Berkowitz, became a Christian. I firmly believe that *no one* is beyond God’s redemption.

Ann Coulter disagrees.

No Hope For Redemption

Coulter once opined, “Once a child commits a crime like that [four-year-old killing his younger brother] what are the odds that he could be taken back [redeemed] in any event, no matter where he’s put?”⁴

Say what? Jesus, who said that nothing is impossible with God, provided His own mission statement at the beginning of His ministry, saying, “The Spirit of the LORD is upon Me, because He has anointed Me

¹ “Redemption,” *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/12677d.htm>.

² See Richard Booker, *The Miracle of the Scarlet Thread*, Logos International, 1981.

³ Countless Christian ministries are devoted to spiritual, emotional, and relational healing, such as New Life Live (<http://newlife.com/>) and Family Life Today (<http://www.familylife.com/>). These ministries bridge redemption and transformation in a very biblically practical manner.

⁴ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 11/17/96.

to preach the gospel to the poor; He has sent Me to heal the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives and recovery of sight to the blind, to set at liberty those who are oppressed; to proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD” (Luke 4:18-19). Indeed, during His earthly ministry, Jesus healed lepers, exorcised demons, and raised people from the dead. Nothing is impossible! That is our assurance and our hope.⁵



The apostle Paul warned the Corinthian church, “Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God” (1 Cor. 6:9-10). But then Paul added, “And such were some of you. But you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God” (1 Cor. 6:11). Yes, God redeemed all of these individuals from their spiritual bondage. He *released* them – and *cleansed* them.

No hope? God forbid!

Perhaps Coulter’s hopelessness about redemption informed her desire following 9/11 “to kill them. And we will kill them.”⁶ But who was she talking about killing?

⁵ Redemption is a common theme in contemporary Christian praise and worship. Nicol Sponberg’s powerfully poignant and hauntingly beautiful *Resurrection* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4t8Sk6cZ-PA>) testifies that no matter how “lifeless and cold” our hearts become, that He can restore the empty shells of our lives, take the broken pieces and make them “whole again.” Phillips, Craig and Dean’s *Your Name* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=othYj8jWSwc>) observes that “nothing has the power to save” except the name of Jesus. Michael W. Smith’s *Above All* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=I7Sn5rV6oM0>) heralds the One who is above all powers, kings, wisdom, “treasures of the earth,” and the whole of creation – the One who “above all” thought of us and died for us that we might live forever with Him. Smith’s *Come See* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eKQ7gbsXuaw>) envisions the open arms of Jesus welcoming His brothers and sisters to complete freedom in Him. Avalon’s *You Were There* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qnNxP2k4Nn4>) reminds us in the midst of every human triumph and tragedy, God was there, and that He who “alone keep[s] the universe from crumbling into dust” was there “during history’s darkest hour” on the cross to redeem us. Carrie Underwood’s *Bless the Broken Road* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bS8mwuGXh4>) observes that God uses every twisted trail and broken road to lead us straight to Him. Casting Crowns’ *Glorious Day* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VXp6xcY5lqU>) extols Jesus’ birth, death, resurrection, and future return, praising His triumph over sin and death. Chris Tomlin’s *I Will Rise* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=WIHUKY3jBv0>) rests in the reality of salvation in Jesus, whose victory over the grave ensures that one day we will rise to worship Him at His throne. Tomlin’s *Jesus Messiah* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=YqHGFtnMOI>) heralds Jesus as our Messiah and Redeemer, who became sin for us that we might become His righteousness – the redeemed and transformed people of God. Hillsong’s *All Things Are Possible* (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x_NcescDvdQ) notes that all things are indeed possible for the God we worship. Keith Green’s *There is a Redeemer* (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=f3_Ufa9pdbQ) and Nicole C. Mullen’s *Redeemer* (<http://www.metrolyrics.com/redeemer-lyrics-nicole-c-mullen.html>) both point to the redemptive realities found in Jesus Christ. Laura Story’s *Mighty to Save* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pYqogpLpC5Q>) emphasizes the power of Jesus’ salvific ministry. Selah’s *Wonderful, Merciful Savior* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oiVvHxgHL5Q>) powerfully extols the Father, Son, and Spirit in their providential care for God’s people. Selah’s *You Raise Me Up* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2DorNUsi5LE>) expresses our confidence in and dependence upon Jesus to make us more than we could otherwise be, even in the storms of life. Todd Agnew’s *Grace Like Rain* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zcGJb-mPMmg>) is a modern and soulful take upon the classic *Amazing Grace*. Rich Mullins’ *My Deliverer* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XxiWIFRm6NY>) proclaims certainty in the One who delivers.

⁶ Ann Coulter, *Crossfire*, CNN, 11/23/01.

Terrorists – whom she defines as “the people cheering and dancing in the street.”⁷ Her scythe seems sharpened to kill a vast number of people.

No hope? I have personally witnessed God’s redemptive power and love in my own life and in the lives of countless people. My own unforgettable experiences include worshipping with a conference room packed with ex-gays on fire for God, thankful to Him for redeeming their lives and healing them of their homosexuality. Remember Paul’s words: “For such were some of you!”

Serial Killers

From the beginning of her public career, Coulter has admitted to a fascination with serial killers. On MSNBC, Coulter said, “I really like the paperback books describing serial killers and I think it’s always going to be interesting to people to have something that evil. Evil is interesting and it’s interesting to see how somebody can develop.”⁸ She added, “It seems to me somebody like a Ted Bundy, who tortures his victims and gets more of a sexual thrill first, is even more evil. So I’m a little more interested in the most evil cases.” Her fascination with those killers does not translate into a desire for their redemption. Indeed, she praised one serial killer for killing himself, saying, “I just want to say Andrew Cunanan is my hero for killing himself.”⁹

Renowned psychologist Dr. James Dobson aired a three-part series of interviews with one of America’s most notorious serial killers, David Berkowitz (“Son of Sam”), on *Focus on the Family*.¹⁰ Those remarkable interviews offer compelling testimony of a *changed* life, a life *transformed* by the grace of God. God reached down and softened the heart of this loathsome and perverted person to become a witness to His redemptive power.

Author and criminologist Byron Johnson observes, “From convicted serial murderers Ted Bundy and Jeffrey Dahmer, to countless lesser-known people, there are many examples one could mention in a discussion of dramatic religious conversions or experiences of spiritual transformation among those who end up incarcerated.”¹¹

Redeeming the Time

Redemption was fulfilled at the cross and is being worked out in the lives of those who are living in its fulfillment (Eph. 1:7-12). The apostle Paul urges Christians to redeem the time (Eph. 5:16), to walk as Jesus walked.

In her very personal, persuasive, and powerful book, *When Godly People Do Ungodly Things*, author and psychologist Beth Moore emphasizes the importance of forgiveness and redemption:

I had asked God to forgive me, but I had never asked God to heal me completely, redeem my past, restore my life, sanctify me entirely, and help me to forgive myself. Until I had allowed God to take full authority over them in every way, my past sins – though turned from and forgiven – were still vulnerabilities where Satan could prey.¹²

⁷ *Ibid.*

⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 7/27/97.

⁹ *Ibid.*

¹⁰ See also <http://www.thesonofhope.com/>.

¹¹ Byron R. Johnson, *More God, Less Crime: Why Faith Matters and How It Could Matter More*, Templeton Press, 2011, pg. 156.

¹² Beth Moore, *When Godly People Do Ungodly Things: Finding Authentic Restoration in the Age of Seduction*, B&H Books, 2002, pg. 75

With forgiveness, God removes our *guilt* (for *what* we have *done* – sinned). With redemption, God removes our *shame* (for *who* we *are* – sinners). The next chapter addresses the next step, transformation into a new creation in Jesus Christ (and a new *identity* as children of God).

Chapter 6

Transformation: By His Spirit

“I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh.” – Ezekiel 36:26

Forgiveness → Redemption → Transformation

With the penalty of our sins paid for by Jesus, we experienced the forgiveness of God. Our debts were paid in full. We became blameless. With redemption, God not only removed our guilt, He also took away our shame. More than that, He began a cleansing process in us, washing away the evil within us. With transformation, He goes a step further, changing our stony hearts into hearts of flesh. Not only is He washing away our sinful nature with His shed blood, but He is clothing us with His own righteousness that we might become more like Him.¹

Forgiveness removes *guilt* (over *what* we have *done*); redemption removes *shame* (over *who* we *are*); transformation *changes* us into a *new* creation in Christ (2 Cor. 5:17). Indeed, in Christ, “old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new.”

Jesus removes the darkness from our lives and gives us His light (Col. 1:13). It is God who gives us “the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ” (2 Cor. 4:6).



Paul speaks of this transformation as a “mystery among the Gentiles” – and explains that mystery in simple terms: “Christ in you, the hope of glory” (Col. 1:27). This spiritual rebirth (see John chapter 3) is a lifelong process of being transformed into the image of Jesus Christ. Where we once lived in darkness, we have now *become* children of light in the Lord (Eph. 5:8). We “are being transformed into the same image from glory to glory, just as by the Spirit of the Lord” (2 Cor. 3:18).

In speaking of this transformation, Paul’s heartfelt confession of faith has moved Christians through the ages: “I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me” (Gal. 2:20). Consequently, Paul exhorts us to present ourselves as a “living sacrifice” to “be transformed by the renewing of” our minds (Rom. 12:1-2).

¹ See John MacArthur, *Twelve Ordinary Men: How the Master Shaped his Disciples for Greatness, and What He Wants to Do With You*, W Publishing Group, 2002; John MacArthur, *Twelve Extraordinary Women: How God Shaped Women of the Bible, and what He Wants to Do With You*, Moody, 2005; C. Peter Wagner, *Your Spiritual Gifts Can Help Your Church Grow*, Regal Books, 1994; and Byron R. Johnson, *More God, Less Crime: Why Faith Matters and How It Could Matter More*, Templeton Press, 2011, www.moregodlesscrime.com.

That's All That Matters?



Speaking to a college audience, Coulter confessed, “Jesus died for my sins – that’s all that matters.”² That sounds nice, but is it true? Yes – and no. Yes, Jesus died for our sins. No, it is not all that matters. What really matters is a person’s response to the grace God exhibited in Jesus’ atoning sacrifice.³

Coulter’s confession of faith is a crucial *first* step for all Christians. But it is *only* a first step. Godly repentance requires bearing the *fruit* of repentance – a *transformed* life. According to the apostle James, “Faith without works is dead” (Jas. 2:20). An unrepentant life is spiritually barren. Jesus’ sacrificial atonement for our sins (salvation) was followed by the power of His resurrected life (transformation).

It is apparent that Coulter does not understand the power of the resurrected life and the source of strength for a Christian. She said, “Christianity fuels everything I write.” “Christianity” is defined as “a monotheistic system of beliefs and practices based on the Old Testament and the teachings of Jesus as embodied in the New Testament and emphasizing the role of Jesus as savior.”⁴

Christianity is a *system*, not a power source. It cannot fuel anything. The apostle Paul wrote, “I can do all things by Christ Jesus, who strengthens me” (Phil. 4:13). It is the *resurrected life* of Jesus Christ living within a Christian which “fuels” a Christian. This theme dominates Paul’s writings. The indwelling of Jesus is *life* to a Christian (Gal. 2:20) and Jesus is our all-sufficiency in life (2 Cor. 12:9). It is by the power of Jesus which rests on us that we have eternal life and through Him that God works in us “both to will and to do for His good pleasure” (Phil 2:13).

² Marvin Olasky, “South Park vs. Ann Coulter,” *World*, 8/13/05.

³ Spiritual transformation is another popular theme in contemporary Christian praise and worship music. Dennis Jernigan’s *You Are My All in All* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RIDr6brKrEc>) proclaims Jesus our strength, our treasure, and our everything. Because He took our sin, our cross, our shame, we can be lifted up by Him to live a transformed life in Him. Vineyard’s *Change My Heart, O God* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mdS0Yf6X8jg>) echoes King David’s request to do just that. Vineyard’s *Refiner’s Fire* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TlnqJ5NjRxc>) points to the God whose refining fire is work in the lives of His children. Hillsong’s *What the Lord Has Done in Me* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=noIqO2sS9W0>) praises the accomplishments of God in His people. Michael English’s *The Only Good Thing in Me* (<http://www.myspace.com/michaelenglishmusic/music/songs/the-only-good-in-me-24759371>) credits God for whatever good overflows from his life. Steven Curtis Chapman’s *All Things New* (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9_Q3NrB_eHM) lifts up the One who created the universe and is re-creating us on His image – making all things new. Rich Mullins’ *Sometimes by Step* (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=E_VnG92wpY) expresses confidence and hope in our Christian walk with God.

⁴ See <http://www.thefreedictionary.com/Christianity>, accessed 9/21/07.

Mature Christians understand that the church universal is the spiritual body of Christ, which is comprised of all of God's redeemed children. The church is the institution through which God's work on earth is accomplished – through a redeemed, yet flawed and fallible, people. Our faith is *not* in any particular church or denomination, but it is in *Jesus Christ*, the head of the church (Eph. 1:22;4:15;5:23, Col. 1:18). Some Christians, and many non-Christians, are confused by this and are perplexed or disillusioned to discover that Christians and churches are imperfect. Consequently, they may fail to discern God's work in the lives of those He has called (1 Cor. 1:26-31).

In his 2nd letter to Timothy, Paul wrote “Having a form of godliness, but denying its power: from such turn away” (2 Tim. 3:5). Yes, some people have “a form of godliness” but they deny the power of a godly life – God in us (Emmanuel). God gives Christians His Holy Spirit, His “spirit of power, of love and of a sound mind” (2 Tim. 1:7). Paul actually says to turn away from those people who deny God's power.⁵

The power Coulter denies is neither systemic nor institutional. It does not derive from a human organization. It is not inherent in any human being. Rather, it comes directly and divinely from God Himself.

The apostle Paul put it simply, “So then, just as you received Christ Jesus as Lord, continue to live in Him, rooted and built up in Him, strengthened in the faith as you were taught, and overflowing with thankfulness” (Col. 2:6-7). Paul presents a two-part process. Part one is receiving Jesus as Lord, which is publicly affirmed at baptism. Part two is a *lifelong process* of continuing to “live in Him.” Theologically-speaking, it is called sanctification and it involves spiritual growth, taking up our crosses, and following Him.⁶ One of the fruit of living in Him is thankfulness.

Criminologist and author Byron Johnson asserts that being born again isn't “all that matters,” but rather, the act of salvation – of Jesus entering our world and redeeming us – is the *beginning* of a lifelong process. Johnson writes:

the key to sustainable behavioral change is the ongoing process of spiritual transformation. My statement that conversion experiences (e.g., becoming a born-again Christian) in isolation of other factors is insufficient for reforming offenders will no doubt be viewed as heresy among some devout believers. To invoke Oswald Chambers, “what we call the process – God calls the end.” The process of spiritual growth and development makes it possible to sustain a turning point that may have been initiated through a conversion.⁷

Spiritual Growth and Maturity

Coulter correctly observed that the United States “has been able to have unprecedented freedoms that other countries have never even seen, because we have always had a private moral structure. Unfettered

⁵ See my sermon, “[Living the Resurrected Life](http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3),” in Appendix 4. Audio can be obtained at <http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3>.

⁶ Consider a prayer by St. Francis of Assisi: “Almighty, eternal, just, and merciful God, grant us in our misery the grace to do for You alone what we know You want us to do, and always to desire what pleases you. Thus, inwardly cleansed, interiorly enlightened, and inflamed by the fire of the Holy Spirit, may we be able to follow in the footsteps of Your beloved Son, our Lord Jesus Christ.”

⁷ Byron R. Johnson, *More God, Less Crime: Why Faith Matters and How It Could Matter More*, Templeton Press, 2011, pg. 164.

freedom is not such a great thing if people don't have character."⁸ Character is created by God's transforming power in our lives which is developed in a process of spiritual growth.

Spiritual growth depends upon two things: 1) *repentance*, turning toward God, putting off the old man, and 2) *transformation*, living by faith and in the spirit of God, putting on the new man. GOGI: Garbage Out, Godliness In.

A Christian, fueled by the very power of God, lives a transformed life by a living faith in the resurrected life of the Savior within. First, the fruit of repentance (2 Cor. 7:9-11) and then the fruit of the Spirit (Gal. 5:22-23) become evident in a Christian who is growing in the grace and the knowledge of Jesus Christ. As we walk in faith with Christ, and as we seek to do what Jesus would do, we become more like Christ. Spiritual growth and maturity become hallmarks of those who walk by faith and not by sight.

In 1997, Coulter lamented, "I do believe in heaven. I'm what C.S. Lewis called 'the worst sort of Christian.' I believe enough to feel really miserable about not being a saint, and not enough to actually be a saint. So I'm just sort of miserable all the time."⁹ A decade later, Coulter claims to be completely at peace with herself, apparently having given up on being a saint.

Status Quo Christian

Sadly, Coulter uses her spiritual salvation to justify her spiritual stagnation, as observed in her AOL interview.¹⁰ Note that Coulter identifies *justified* criticism of *her* with *unjustified* persecution of *Christians*.

Not only do Christians not mind being attacked, we think it's kind of macho because Christ predicted we would be attacked. And also, if you really believe Christ died for your sins, nothing else really matters. So *Vanity Fair* doesn't like me, boo hoo. Christ died for my sins, so what do they have for me? ... And it gives you freedom to act boldly. Christians are always operating – at least this Christian is – with a net. There's nothing anyone can do to us. As Paul said, 'If Christ had not risen, than eat, drink, and be merry, for tomorrow you die.' Well, we think Christ is risen, so whatever gifts God has given you, you have to pursue them to your utmost expense and not be worried about people yelling at you. ...

Here, Coulter speaks of the risen Christ and acknowledges the gifts God has given her – and, I believe, God has manifestly given Coulter many spiritual gifts – yet she gives no thought to how she might be *misusing* those gifts, no concern for whether any criticism is valid.

Patrick: Also, with Christians, it's not just things we're given, but things we're called to do. And one of the things that Christians are called to do is to love one another. You are very vocal in the book and in the media about the transformative power of Christian love. So I want to know, is calling someone a harpy like you did during the 9-11...

Coulter: You can see I haven't been transformed.

⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 6/7/97.

⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/23/97.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, AOL interview, 7/14/06, <http://books.aol.com/feature/a/license-to-be-bold/20060717101109990001>, audio at http://aolradio.podcast.aol.com/books/aolbooks_anncoulter_071406.mp3.

Amazingly, Coulter *admits* she hasn't been transformed. She admits that Christian love is not operative in her life. Coulter won't admit to the possibility of transformation because she won't accept it in her life. Transformation would mean change and, change of and by itself, would prove her current imperfection.

Patrick: Is that part of Christian love?

Coulter: Well, two things to that. One, like I said, whatever gifts you've been given. You can't imagine what people will say to me, 'Would Christ talk like this.' No, but Christ wouldn't be a stand-up comic, Christ wouldn't be a NASCAR driver, Christ wouldn't be Bobby Weir playing in the band. He had other fish to fry. So whatever gift God gives you – and in my case I think that involves irony and sarcasm, that's what you use. And the other thing I'd say is yes, we have the whole love part of Christianity, but there's also the sword part. Jesus was not ... I mean, ask the money-changers how nice Jesus was. There are many commands to go out and do battle against evil. And maybe I don't get it right. Maybe when I meet my Maker He'll say I was too harsh. Maybe He'll say I wasn't harsh enough. Who knows? I'll apologize for not getting it right and thank Him for dying for my sins.

Coulter's words can best be described as arrogant self-will. Yes, Coulter has justified her own lack of love by citing Jesus and His sword as her role model, despite the fact that love is the essence of what a Christian should be, and the essence of who Jesus was, is, and always will be.

Jesus declared liars to be children of Satan, the father of lies (John 8:42-45) and He calls His disciples to be children of truth. Jesus commands His followers to exhibit love as their foremost attribute (John 13:34-35; 15:12-17). The apostle John is exceptionally clear in stating, "Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love" (see 1 John 2:9-11; 3:11-24; 4:7-21). Coulter expressly conveys her hatred for most of humanity and is a compulsive liar. Why, then, would Christians look to such an ungodly person as a representative of godliness?

Such Were Some of You

In his first letter to the Corinthian church, Paul listed specific *behaviors* which would preclude entry into the kingdom of God, including adultery and homosexuality. Then Paul wrote, "And such were some of you. But you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God" (1 Cor. 6:11).

Yes, Jesus is able (and eager) to *forgive* any sin, *redeem* us from any lifestyle, and *transform* us into godly people.

Surprisingly, Coulter once erupted with lavish praise for former welfare queen Star Parker (a conservative success story), yet she loathes victims of eating disorders and sexual abuse who are overcoming their past. For instance, Coulter repeatedly ridiculed Naomi Wolf for her testimonial-style books and despised the "dysfunctional" Princess Diana. In *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Coulter skewered Wolf – for doing what she herself cannot do, that is, speak openly about personal victimhood. Confession, per Coulter's Catholic upbringing, is good for the soul, yet Coulter disparages people who have courageously addressed private issues (e.g., anorexia, sexual abuse, rape) in order to help others.

Coulter's spiritually-enriching essay for *Good Housekeeping* (see chapter 19) exemplifies why she has become an icon to so many moral and cultural conservatives. *Good Housekeeping* rejected her essay because it did not conform to its very clear guidelines. Coulter explained: "*Good Housekeeping* kept telling me to make it more 'personal,' which was like telling a dog to make soufflé. I'm a Republican.

That column is as personal as it gets. ... In *Good Housekeeping*-ese, “personal” seems to mean “something involving victimhood and tragedy.”

Turning the World Upside Down

To recap, forgiveness pays our debt in full; redemption takes our darkness and offers a new beginning; and transformation gives us His light in a process of *recreation*.

The Christian life is one of transformation. God calls the weak and the base to confound the strong and the mighty (1 Cor. 1:26-29). It is in our weakness that we experience the all-sufficiency of Christ (2 Cor. 12:9). We “can do all things through Christ who strengthens” us (Phil. 4:13) because, within these frail earthen vessels called our bodies resides the treasure of God’s Holy Spirit, “that the excellence of the power may be of God and not of us” (2 Cor. 4:7).¹¹

The early apostolic church was composed of redeemed, transformed Christians who “turned the world upside down” (Acts 17:6). Jesus’ revolutionary gospel was premised upon the power of God to reach down into the heart of man in redemptive grace to transform that heart into one devoted to doing His will in a spirit of truth and love. Richard Stearns, President of World Vision, speaks of Jesus’ calling – “for a redeemed world order populated by redeemed people – *now*.”¹² According to Stearn, Jesus’ gospel “embraced a revolutionary new view of the world, an earth transformed by transformed people.”¹³

Each one of us has been called to the Great Commission (Mt. 28:16-20). Our ministry is within our own spheres of influence, empowered and directed by the Holy Spirit. However, without an inward transformation of the inner man, our efforts are in vain. “‘Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit,’ Says the LORD of hosts” (Zech. 4:6). It is Christ living within us, transforming us on a daily basis, which yields fruit in our lives (John 15:1-17).

¹¹ See John MacArthur, *Our Sufficiency in Christ*, Crossway Books, 1998.

¹² Richard Stearns, *The Hole in Our Gospel: What Does God Expect From Us? The Answer That Changed My Life and Might Just Change the World*, Thomas Nelson, 2009, pg. 16.

¹³ *Ibid.*, pg. 20.

Chapter 7

Love: God's Desire and Goal for Us

“A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another.” – John 13:34-35

Jesus' Gospel of Love

In word and in deed, by exhortation and by example, Jesus calls upon His disciples to walk with Him in a journey of love. In His famous Sermon on the Mount, Jesus provided an attitudinal and behavioral framework for Christian living. His universal command is to “love your enemy” and to “do good to those who use you and persecute you” (Mt. 5:44). Jesus told the assembled crowd that the two great commandments are 1) love God and 2) love your neighbor (John 13:34-35). With even greater clarity about charity, Jesus instructed His disciples to exhibit *sacrificial* love by loving one another as He had loved them, stating, “This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one’s life for his friends” (John 15:12-13).¹

The apostle John, known as the apostle of love, took Jesus’ words to heart and, inspired by the Holy Spirit, emphasized that love for God *cannot* be separated from love for our fellow man.² If we don’t love the latter, we do not love the former. In fact, we are not “of God” if we do not love our brother. These are strong words of approbation from a loving disciple. John added that if we do not love, we abide in death!

As Christian author Beth Moore writes, “Christ has called us instead to stand firm to the end and never give in to a coldness of heart. To Christ, loving is living.”³ The apostle Peter agreed, admonishing the brethren that “above all things” they should “have a fervent love for one another” (1 Pet. 4:8). The 13th chapter of Paul’s first epistle to the Corinthians is a beautiful and poetry *description* of love, the *greatest* gift.⁴

Christian historian and researcher George Barna writes, “the purpose of this life is to honor God by loving Him and other people, by expressing such love through obeying and worshiping Him in everything we do, and by serving other people with every ounce of strength we have.”⁵ Proactive love in action is the goal and purpose of a Christian’s life.

¹ See Hannah Whital Smith, *God Is Enough*, Ballantine Books, 1986, and Philip Keller, *A Gardener Looks at the Fruits of the Spirit*, Word Books, 1979.

² See 1st John 3:10,14-18,23, 1st John 4:7-12,16-21, 1st John 5:1-2, 2nd John 1:5.

³ Beth Moore, *When Godly People Do Ungodly Things: Finding Authentic Restoration in the Age of Seduction*, B&H Books, 2002, pg. 248.

⁴ The theme of love will always be popular among those who worship their Savior and Redeemer, and it is reflected in their music. Chris Tomlin’s *Forever* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6umWkVwpfBk>) praises the God whose “love endures forever.” Hillsong’s *Shout to the Lord* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HzNsEBPB-Z8>) rejoices in “the wonders of [God’s] mighty love,” offering praise to His power and majesty and trusting in His promises. Avalon’s *Testify to Love* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TgZ1ds0WM2k>) powerfully witnesses to love and its power, as does Hillsong’s *Power of Your Love* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Ga6Qtxzd6vk>) and Michael W. Smith’s *More Love, More Power* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TDROYE0wCMg>). Matthew West’s *More* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=m1TRKCDel44>) passionately proclaims God’s unquenchable love for His children, whom He loves more than the physical creation, and whom He delights in watching shine like the stars.

⁵ George Barna, *The Seven Faith Tribes: Who They Are, What They Believe, and Why They Matter*, BarnaBooks, 2009, pg. 188.

Coulter's Hate Speech

Readers may recall Coulter's humorous admission from 1997: "[I'm a] right-wing crazy and proud of it. I'm included in a hate group – what do they call them? 'The right-wing haters.'"⁶ Coulter, once chastised for having "an ice cube for a heart,"⁷ has become the Left's caricature of a mean-spirited Republican, a fact she readily acknowledged in an exchange with attorney Susan Estrich.⁸

COULTER: "When he [George W. Bush] starts talking about how he's going to be compassionate, and talking about these mythical, apocryphal [hard-hearted and mean-spirited conservatives] ..."

ESTRICH: "That's you, I think."

COULTER: "I think it is too!"

Coulter's hostile, take-no-prisoners style has not been overlooked by her peers. In the late 1990s alone, she was described as the "famous attack dog among commentators"⁹ who "certainly takes pride in her sharp claws [with] classic Coulter, in-your-face outrageousness,"¹⁰ "an ubiquitous flamethrower" who



"has no mercy,"¹¹ a "strident, right-wing pundit,"¹² "a strident, fire-breathing right-wing doyenne"¹³ with a "penchant for inflammatory remarks,"¹⁴ an "ice princess"¹⁵ with "high-octane conservative commentary,"¹⁶ and an "acid-tongued blonde"¹⁷ and "rabble-rouser legal columnist"¹⁸ with "good Aryan looks and ice-people politics"¹⁹ who "delights in going for the jugular."²⁰

In 1997, the Center for Individual Rights' own *Docket Report* observed, "Fiercely disputing insinuations that she sometimes spouts conservative clichés, Coulter described her positions as 'all new invective.'"²¹

⁶ Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

⁷ Gerry Spence, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 11/19/99.

⁸ Ann Coulter, *Fox Face Off*, FNC, 6/18/99.

⁹ R.D. Heldenfels, *Akron Beacon Journal*, 9/23/99.

¹⁰ Mary Jacoby, "The Pundettes," *Capital Style*, December 1997, pp. 44-45.

¹¹ Charles James, Division over the death penalty," *Daily Transcript*, 10/28/97.

¹² Robert Nixon, "Running on Labels," *Fairfield County Weekly*, 8/5/99, <http://www.campbell4congress.com/news9.html>.

¹³ Rodney Welch, "Thrillers: The Good and the Ludicrous," *Free Times* (Columbia's Free Weekly), 8/4-10/99.

¹⁴ Anne Marie O'Connor, "Ann Coulter: Post-Feminist Pundit," *George*, September 1997, pg. 117.

¹⁵ Noemie Emery, *Heterodoxy*, October 1999, <http://www.frontpagemag.com/het/emery12-13-99.htm>.

¹⁶ Trevor Butterworth, Media Critic, *NewsWatch*, 3/4/99, <http://www.newsWatch.org/mediacritic/mar99/990304m1.htm>.

¹⁷ Michael Isikoff & Evan Thomas, "The Secret War," *Newsweek*, 2/9/98, pg. 43.

¹⁸ Bill Maher, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 11/16/00.

¹⁹ Philip Nobile, "The Worst Talking Heads on Television," 9/23/00, <http://www.tompaine.com/news/2000/09/23/index.html>.

²⁰ Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, pg. D4.

²¹ *CIR Docket Report*, Center for Individual Rights, July 1997.

According to *National Journal*, “Coulter herself prefers being called a right-wing crazy rather than a humorless ideologue.”²² The following year, upon receiving her award as Conservative Journalist of the Year at CPAC 2000, Coulter gave a brief acceptance speech: “It took me about one year to persuade [Human Events] that a half-page was really not enough for me to get in all I wanted to say, so now you can get a *whole* page of an Ann Coulter polemic, and about two years to persuade them to stop cutting the snide remarks.”²³

On the eve of the 2000 election, a Coulter rant appeared on *National Review*: “Oh, how I hate them! And, oh, how I hate the waiting. To quote wacky comic Prof. Irwin Corey, when asked about his feelings on the subject of love: ‘I like love, because it’s so close to hate. And without hate, there could be no revenge.’ Tomorrow, we take revenge.”²⁴

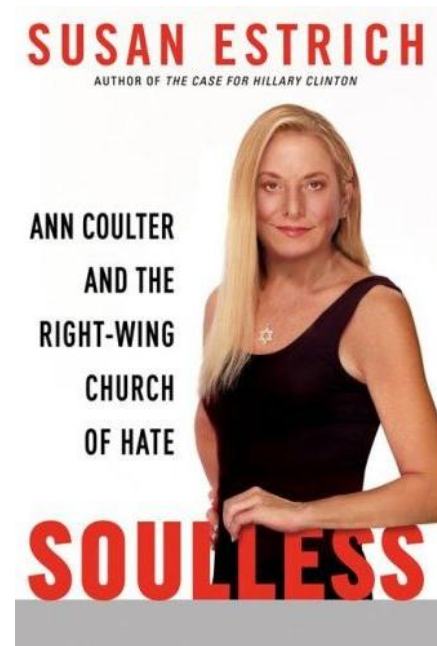
Coulter feels free to hate *indiscriminately*. Taking pride in her polemics, loving her loathing, and fomenting hatred in others, she apparently does not know *how* to love.²⁵ While well-versed in the art of hatred, Coulter seemingly knows nothing about love. Her espoused enmity for John McCain bares the barrenness of love in her heart. Coulter claims she once loved McCain – but as early as 1999, came to despise him.

Regarding McCain, she said, “I used to love him [John McCain], then I liked him, now I despise him.”²⁶ (Ann, if you “despise” him *now*, you didn’t “love” him *then*.) Remember, Coulter’s hatred of McCain stems from his *politics*, not who he is as a *person*!

Hate Speech Intensified

2001 began with a conservative criticizing Coulter for engaging in the politics of personal destruction and ended with Coulter proving that conservative correct. Having Republican control of the White House and Congress did little to improve Coulter’s spirits. Forever in attack mode, Coulter’s enmity seemed to grow.²⁷

She referred to Roger Ebert as “a has-been movie reviewer ... senile old fellow ... that crank movie reviewer in Chicago.”²⁸ She condemned “Clinton Kool-Aid drinker Margaret Carlson”²⁹ and asserted that all liberals “are really insane.”³⁰ One essay title is noteworthy for its *dehumanization* of her foes: “National Organization for Worms.”³¹



Per Coulter, liberals are not just insane, but evil, as she professes in this story: “While having dinner recently with John Lott, author of ‘More Guns, Less Crime,’ one of life’s enduring debates came up: Are

²² Annys Shin, “Blond Ambition on the Right,” *National Journal*, 5/31/97, pg. 1088.

²³ Ann Coulter, acceptance speech at CPAC, 1/21/00.

²⁴ Ann Coulter, *National Review*, 11/7/00, <http://www.nationalreview.com/comment/comment110700a.shtml>.

²⁵ John, the apostle of love, wrote, “Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love.” (1st John 4:8).

²⁶ Ann Coulter, quoted in *Washington Post*, 8/1/00.

²⁷ For greater insight into Coulter’s hate speech, see “Chapter 4: ... Brains ...,” “Chapter 7: Spawn of Satan Convention,” and “Chapter 8: Polemics R Us,” in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf. See also my documentary, “Coulter Speak,” Citizens for Principled Conservatism, 2006, <http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/Coulter%20Speak.wmv>.

²⁸ Ann Coulter, “You’ve Got Mail II,” *Human Events*, 1/19/01.

²⁹ Ann Coulter, “Liberals Shocked: Felon Took Ottoman,” *Human Events*, 2/19/01.

³⁰ *Ibid.*

³¹ Ann Coulter, “National Organization for Worms,” 7/18/01.

liberals evil or just stupid? I was surprised to discover that Lott vigorously disputed those of us staking out the evil position.”³²

With the turn of the millennium, Coulter’s hate speech became habitual.³³ So much so that former congressman John Kasich, while guest-hosting *The O’Reilly Factor*, courageously confronted Coulter. On January 11th, Coulter both *engaged in* and *denied using* hate speech. Coulter went ballistic when Kasich suggested her own rhetoric was inappropriate:³⁴

COULTER: But when you’re going after people *personally* for what they look like ... It’s gonna be hard to have an argument now that you’ve located the one honorable Democrat on the face of the earth.

KASICH: You are contributing to the politics of personal destruction, aren’t you, by saying that there isn’t a good Democrat, that they all lie

COULTER: As soon as they produce – Look! The first time one has been produced I admitted it. What else do you want from me?

KASICH: Is he the only one?

Kasich later suggested that some conservatives, like Coulter, did indeed engage in the politics of personal destruction: “No! No, that is *not* true and I really think it is important to distinguish any attacks I’ve *ever* leveled at public officials have had to do with what they’re *doing*. I haven’t made fun of someone for makeup.”³⁵



Fittingly, and unknown to the host, Coulter was busy writing her second book, then titled *Loathing on the Left: The Liberal Compulsion to Hate Conservatives*. Coulter obliquely broached that issue in her very next column: “But by now, it surely has become clear that I have political Tourette’s Syndrome and no amount of invective will stop me. So the hate mail is pretty thin these days. (Though it does still come with rainbow ‘tolerance’ return address labels.)”³⁶

Does Coulter really express and exhibit hatred? Consider her own words. She said, “I think I’m second-to-none in my hatred for the government.”³⁷ Also, “It just reminded me of my *hatred* for the media.”³⁸ Finally, “(I for one bolted past indifference straight into loathing, long ago.)”³⁹

So intense is Coulter’s hatred that she must restrain violent impulses.

- “I could kill him [Newt Gingrich] myself just for the inane debates that are about to ensue.”⁴⁰

³² Ann Coulter, “More Facts, Fewer Liberals,” 3/7/01.

³³ See also my documentary, “[Coulter Speak](http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/Coulter%20Speak.wmv),” Citizens for Principled Conservatism, 2006, <http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/Coulter%20Speak.wmv>.

³⁴ *O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 1/11/01.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, *O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 1/11/01.

³⁶ Ann Coulter, “You’ve Got Mail II,” *Human Events*, 1/19/01.

³⁷ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/19/97.

³⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/21/96.

³⁹ Ann Coulter, *Human Events*, 8/18/00.

- “If I have to restrain myself from bombing abortion clinics because that’s the law then these guys can’t jump off the bench.”⁴¹
- “I think you would be nicer to me if you thought I was packing [a gun].”⁴²
- “If the death penalty doesn’t deter murder, how come Michael Moore is still alive and I’m not on death row?”⁴³
- “I think that every day when I take the New York City subway. But I can analyze my feelings. My privacy. I would like to kill all of them. I can analyze that and stop myself from killing people on a New York City street.”⁴⁴

Coulter would even come to endorse *vigilantism*, “(On the plus side, pervasive outrage over leniency towards criminals gave rise to awesome movies like Charles Bronson’s *Death Wish* and Clint Eastwood’s *Dirty Harry* movies.)”⁴⁵ *Awesome movies?*



Nevertheless, Coulter’s hate speech escalated as her notoriety grew. On-air, Coulter candidly asked Bill Maher, “Is that Richard Belzer on your panel? I thought it was Osama Bin Laden.”⁴⁶

Dan Flynn, author of *Why the Left Hates America*, rightly noted that many people are offended over small, inconsequential matters, suggesting “people probably need to get thicker skins.” However, “when there is legitimate hate speech, people should condemn it.”⁴⁷ Sadly, few conservatives or Christians condemn hate speech from their own. Flynn made this telling point: “The person issuing the hate speech always comes out looking worse than the recipient.”

My brethren, as we eschew the enmity espoused and exhibited by Coulter, let not our hearts harbor hatred towards her. Rather, let us, too, learn to love our enemies, to pray for those who do all manner of evil against us. Paul admonished us not to be overcome by evil, but rather to “overcome evil with good” (Rom. 12:21).⁴⁸

Kevin McCullough, a Coulter colleague and confidante, recently acknowledged, “She draws large crowds at both conservative and homosexual political conferences. She speaks openly of her own faith (Christianity), while regularly misinterpreting and/or misleading others as to the meanings of Christ, specifically the most important Christian doctrine – Grace.”⁴⁹

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, Universal Press Syndicate, 8/20/99.

⁴¹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 5/16/97.

⁴² Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 2/26/01.

⁴³ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, 2006, pp. 25-26.

⁴⁴ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 7/11/00.

⁴⁵ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, 2006, pg. 28.

⁴⁶ Ann Coulter, *Real Time*, HBO, 10/30/04.

⁴⁷ Author interview.

⁴⁸ For greater insight on love, see my sermon, “[Living the Resurrected Life](http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3),” which can be obtained at <http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3>.

⁴⁹ Kevin McCullough, “How Do You Solve a Problem Like Ann Coulter?” *Hot Air*, 11/17/11.

Chapter 8

Truth: True Freedom in Christ

“And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. ... Therefore if the Son makes you free, you shall be free indeed.” – John 8:32,36

Truth → Freedom

A universal article of faith, that truth liberates, is also a central tenet of Christianity. The New Testament reveals that Christians can *know* the truth (John 8:32), are to *believe* the truth (2 Thess. 2:13), should *obey* the truth (1 Pet. 1:22), and should *love* the truth (2 Thess. 2:10).¹

Indeed, Jesus declared that Christians are *sanctified* by the truth (John 17:17-19) which is found in the written and incarnate Word of God. Consequently, Christians become the salt of the earth and the light of the world (Mt. 5:13-16).

Jesus declared Himself to be the truth (John 14:6) and Scripture – whether Old or New Testament – affirms God’s affinity for, love of, and demand for truth. Anything less than truth is incompatible with being a Christian.²

Coulter’s Truth Deficit

After 9/11, Coulter went on a rampage: “I think death will bring them down, and I think that is what will happen. That’s the whole point here, to kill them. And we will kill them.”³ Asked exactly who she intended to kill, Coulter elaborated, “the terrorists, the people cheering and dancing in the street.”⁴ At least under political correctness on college campuses, a student would only be expelled for “inappropriate laughter.” For Coulter, it is a death penalty!⁵

Defining “terrorists” as “people cheering and dancing in the street,” Coulter’s earlier definition included hundreds of millions of people (“Those responsible include anyone anywhere in the world who smiled”).⁶ She has an equally expansive definition of treason. In early 2003, Coulter concluded, “If this is not treason, then treason has no meaning.”⁷ What was Coulter referring to? Democrats in Congress who *failed to clap* during President Bush’s 2003 State of the Union address. *That* was the quintessential definition and example of treason?

¹ John MacArthur, *The Truth War: Fighting for Certainty in an Age of Deception*, Thomas Nelson, 2007, pp. 21-22. See also Pope John Paul II, *The Splendor of Truth (Veritatis Splendor)*, St. Paul Books & Media, 1993.

² Casting Crowns’ *Voice of Truth* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=KwsvqVmFV6Y>) resolves to hear only God’s voice of truth and refuse to heed the lies of Satan and the world which seek to ensnare, enslave, and defeat believers, while Maranatha Singer’s *Knowing You* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pwC4sXa2kWo>) resolves to know Jesus as the source of both the abundant life today and eternal life.

³ Ann Coulter, *Crossfire*, CNN, 11/23/01.

⁴ *Ibid.*

⁵ For greater insight into Coulter’s propensity to prevaricate, see “Chapter 6: I Am Victim, Hear Me Whine,” and “Chapter 10: Taking a Demonic Turn,” in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

⁶ Ann Coulter, “This is War,” 9/12/01.

⁷ Ann Coulter, “War-Torn Democrats,” 1/29/03.

In her first post-9/11 book, *Slander* (2002), Coulter bore false witness against numerous individuals and whole groups of people.⁸ Outright lies, falsehoods, exaggerations, and fabrications filled its pages, so much so that scores of websites documented its lack of veracity.⁹ Subsequent Coulter books have had their own problems with truth. At times, her truth deficit even strains the grace of her defenders.

Heartless

Remember Hillary Clinton's re-titling of Coulter's fifth book to *Heartless*? What prompted the firestorm of outrage over Coulter's book? Simply put, Coulter told vicious lies about four (liberal) 9/11 widows. During countless interviews, Coulter defended her attacks against those particular victims of 9/11, whom she derisively called McWidows. Indeed, she compounded her sin by presuming the worst of her victims as she *impugned their character – without any evidence at all to back up her slanderous claims*. Consider these extracts from *Godless* (2006):

These broads are millionaires, lionized on TV and in articles about them, reveling in their status as celebrities and stalked by grief-arazzis. These self-obsessed women seemed genuinely unaware that 9/11 was an attack on our nation and acted as if the terrorist attacks happened only to them. ... I've never seen people enjoying their husbands' deaths so much ... how do we know their husbands weren't planning to divorce these harpies? Now that their shelf life is dwindling, they'd better hurry up and appear in *Playboy*.



⁸ See John C. Cotey, "Bestseller trampled under footnotes," *St. Petersburg Times*, 8/26/02; Michael Scherer and Sarah Secules, "How Slippery is Slander?" *Columbia Journalism Review*, Nov/Dec 2002. For a precise, detailed analysis of *Slander*, check out the July and August 2002 archives for Daily Howler (<http://www.dailyhowler.com/archives-2002.shtml>).

⁹ Though reluctant to apply the term "pathological liar" to Coulter, that application is validated by the plethora of prevarication contained in all of her post-9/11 books. *Slander* alone has been amply documented as replete with lies, falsehoods, fabrications, mischaracterizations and the like all to prove her thesis – see <http://slannder.homestead.com/>, July 2002 entries for <http://www.dailyhowler.com/archives-2002.shtml> and April 2005 entries in <http://www.dailyhowler.com/archives-2005.shtml>.

This dialogue from *Hannity & Colmes* is instructive:¹⁰

COLMES: Let me ask you this. Ann, do you think they, for one second, these women wouldn't give up whatever notoriety

COULTER: They just woke up one day and suddenly they're on the *Today Show*.

COLMES: Please answer my, please answer my question.

COULTER: They didn't ask for that.

COLMES: Hold on one second. Decaf, next time. Do you think these women, for one second

COULTER: You're saying crazy things.

COLMES: Decaf, please. Calm down. Do you think for one second, these women would not give up every piece of celebrity and notoriety they have to have their husbands back?

COULTER: Oh, I don't know. At this point, to give up \$2 million

COLMES: To have their husbands back.

COULTER: – and to go back to cooking meals and not be –

SCHWARTZ: Oh, my God, what are you saying, Ann?

COLMES: They wouldn't do that to have their husbands back?

SCHWARTZ: These are woman, that had husbands

COULTER: – appearing in *Vanity Fair*. They're clearly enjoying their celebrity status.

COLMES: They would not give up, I want to be clear on this. They would not give this up to get their husbands back?

COULTER: I don't know. I can't read into their hearts. But it isn't as obvious to me as it apparently is to you.

COLMES: Really?

COULTER: They're taking limos around –

(Isn't Coulter a multi-millionaire who has appeared repeatedly on the *Today Show* and in *Vanity Fair*.)

Coulter's attacks against the Jersey Girls were barren of truth and pregnant with enmity. Nevertheless, many Christians and conservatives abandoned their principles to defend their heroine's indefensible remarks – *while claiming they were doing so on principle!*

Slander, Treason, Talk

On a larger scale, Coulter's worldview seems premised upon a whole series of big lies: all liberals are stupid, evil, traitors seeking to destroy civilization; all Arabs and Muslims are terrorists; "liberalism and terrorism are different stages of the same disease" (her actual speech title); all liberals are godless, all conservatives are godly.

In *Slander*, Coulter condemned the politics of personal destruction and the vitriolic public square by concluding, "At the risk of giving away the ending: It's all liberals' fault." With the publication of

¹⁰ *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/8/06.

Treason (2003), Coulter posited her propositions that liberalism = terrorism = treason and conservatism = McCarthyism = patriotism. In *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)* (2004), Coulter asserted, “Nothing too extreme can be said about liberals because it’s all true.” *These are all truth claims which are demonstrably false.* Indeed, Coulter’s own rhetoric disproves her assertions.

Since at least 2004, Coulter has been portrayed as a heroic martyr speaking the truth to the power of evil. Rather, in the name of truth, Coulter is using the power of her bully pulpit to perpetuate grossly inaccurate stereotypes which distort and detract from the truth.

With *Godless*, some people of God *became* godless.

Sandy Rios Interview

During the controversy over Coulter’s defamation of the Jersey Girls, Christian talk show host Sandy Rios vigorously defended Coulter. Rios, former President of Concerned Women for America, would not condemn Coulter’s vicious lies for what they were – vicious lies.

In 2008, I interviewed Rios at the Values Voter Summit in Washington, D.C., and she candidly answered my questions. We dealt with politics, religion, and Coulter in a brief, but sublimely genuine conversation. [My analysis is italicized.]

DB: We are at the Values Voter Summit. What values are preeminent to you and your audience?

SR: The answer for me might be different from my audience, but for me it’s the moral issues. They’re just non-negotiable, and I think they tell us a lot about a candidate’s character, how they stand on that, and it reflects then on the other issues. So, the issues of life, of course, and the issue of homosexual marriage, homosexual rights, finding that balance between loving and caring, which, as far as I’m concerned, not advancing that lifestyle is really loving and caring. So, those two things are very important to me. But, of course, national defense, the overburden of tax, big government, illegal immigration – all of those things are important to me.

DB: How does your faith in God dictate your walk with God?

SR: Well, I think that it can be summed up in the verse that “in Him, we live and move and have our being.” I can’t – I cannot *breathe* without God in my life. I can’t function. I can’t make decisions. I don’t want to. I don’t ever want to be apart from Him. So, it is at the center of everything I say and do.

DB: Would you agree that truth and love are indispensable attributes of a Christian?

SR: [Pause] Yes. Absolutely. And they aren’t the only ones. God is Truth. Jesus is Truth. He is not “a” truth, He is “the” Truth. So, when you embrace Him, follow Him, become a Christ-follower, conform your mind to the mind of Christ, it is synonymous with Truth. And God is love and in Him there is no darkness at all. Of course, love is just one of the outflowings – you know, John says, “If we say that we love Him and hate our brother, there is no truth in us.” The truth is not in us. Love is the quintessential personality quality of someone who loves God.

There was an intimacy in her answers that was all the more poignant and profound due to the circumstances of the interview. Jesus shined through. Rather than give rote answers, Rios spoke from the heart with sincerity and grace.

DB: When the controversy erupted over Ann Coulter's attacks against the 9/11 widows, you rose to her defense. I'm wondering why?

SR: Ann is a friend and I really care about her, and my standards, my worldview is not necessarily exactly Ann's. I did think that there's a measure of truth to her criticism – there always is. Ann says things in an outrageous way because that's her method, but Ann Coulter is not Sandy Rios. So, I think that she was right about some of the deepest parts of that. I did think that there was some sort of victimization that went over the line and became inappropriate. And I probably wouldn't have said it, but Ann did. I'm not crazy about the way she said it. I wouldn't say it the way she does. But Ann is Ann. She says things the way she says them. And I love her as a friend, but that doesn't mean I agree with her on everything.

Rios is not the first to make this "Ann is just Ann" defense of Ann – an utterly absurd defense proffered by intelligent and articulate people who should know better. If Ann is misbehaving, then Ann being "just Ann" isn't good enough. Can you imagine anyone saying, "Michael [Moore] is just being Michael," or "Ward [Churchill] is just being Ward" and then dismissing criticism directed at them? Time and time again, conservative leaders condemn liberals for the very things for which they refuse to chastise Coulter.

DB: [Lengthy pause.] I'm debating whether to ask you this next question.

SR: [Laughs] Oh, go ahead, ask it. I've been asked everything.

DB: Putting aside the principles she was espousing about victimology, will you condemn the language she used, such as referring to them as harpies, claiming that they enjoyed their husbands' deaths, and that they should pose for *Playboy* before their shelf life ends?

SR: You know what, Ann is Ann. I wouldn't agree with that language, but I don't go around critiquing – you know, I have a lot of friends that curse, friends that say things outrageous. I don't condemn everything that comes out of everyone's mouths that I don't agree with. I think at the bottom of it was some truth. And I appreciate the skill that she has in hyperbole, even inappropriate hyperbole. So, I don't feel the need to condemn Ann for that. I don't. If I did, I would say it. I would be busy condemning everybody if I condemned everyone who said something that I thought was over the top – including myself.

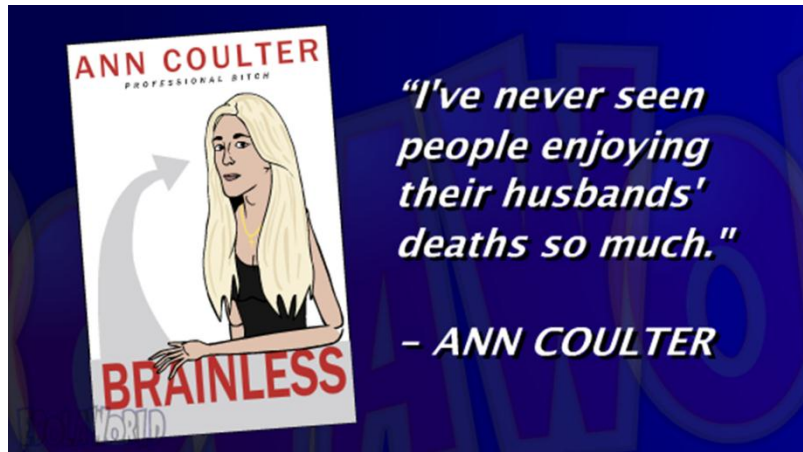
Did you notice? Rios rephrased my question from condemning Coulter's language to condemning Coulter.

"Inappropriate hyperbole?" Let's speak the truth: "harpies," "broad," "shelf life" – these are nasty and hateful characterizations. Insisting that the widows enjoyed their husbands' deaths is an outright lie, which Coulter compounded by suggesting they would have probably have divorced anyway and by saying that if the widows had a choice between their husbands and their money, they would have chosen the latter.

Although she herself is a godly person devoted to the things of God, Rios refuses to condemn Coulter's truly vicious language. Vicious? Berating grieving widows by describing them as being elated at their loss is nothing less than vicious.

Each of Rios' answers regarding Coulter was couched in terms of her friendship with Coulter, but Coulter is more than a friend – she is an extremely prominent spokesman for conservatives and for Christians. As such, her words shape political reality and define the very people whom she purports to represent.

Rios then went on to say that she didn't know the extent or depth of her friend's faith and so was unwilling to judge Coulter by a Rios standard. However, the ultimate question of standards is whether it meets God's criteria. Moreover, the media, political leaders, advocacy groups (and regular folk, too) are constantly making judgments about situations, circumstances, issues and conduct. Whatever the plumb lines – biblical, ideological, environmental – it is appropriate to talk about the criteria and whether they are met. Does Coulter meet the standards of her faith? Or is she a hypocrite?



Rios said that one reason she didn't speak out against her friend was that her friend isn't a recognized religious leader. Here, too, she is wrong.

Coulter launched her Godless tour explicitly claiming to represent the godly, specifically stating her own articles of faith, and eagerly judging her foes as godless. Her specific faith and values claims were then articulated on religious programs and at religious conferences. Coulter was held up as a spiritual spokesman. Indeed, for the past ten years, Coulter has claimed to speak for God, politicizing her faith – equating genuine faith solely with one political party. She has made her religious and political views inseparable, becoming a spokesman for not just conservatives but for Christ.

In my view, every Christian should rebuke Coulter, who defames Christ by preaching a false gospel of hatred and death when Jesus came in love to give life. Coulter's conversation and conduct give Christians and conservatives a bad name.

Finally, in trying to help Ann, Coulter-enablers are crippling her: they are enabling her to be less than she can (and should) be. If Rios, et al., truly love Coulter, they should hold her accountable for her words and actions. Love speaks the truth, as Sandy noted in talking about gay marriage. Love does not enable the loved one to engage in self-destructive behavior, physically or spiritually. Our Father chastises us that we might grow. The Vinedresser prunes us that we might bear more fruit.

Too many Christians place their loyalty to Coulter above their allegiance to God.

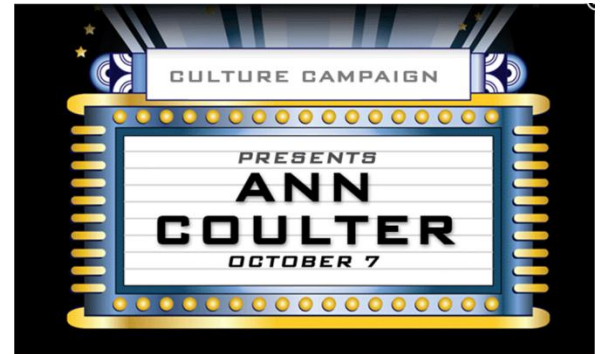
In the end, Rios proved herself a woman of her word who could exhibit Christian charity towards a person critical of someone she loves. Except ...

I asked Rios if she would like to review those portions of my book which included her, and she eagerly agreed, also agreeing to keep them confidential. The following Monday, I emailed Rios those files. The subsequent Monday, I emailed her my own personal testimony (see preface). The Monday after that, I called her. To date, Rios has not deigned to respond. However, I have learned that she did indeed divulge those confidential files to other people.

Despite the then latest Coulter controversy – her courting of Republican gay activists at GOProud (see chapter 20) – Rios nevertheless invited her friend, Coulter, to keynote a Culture Campaign forum.

As renowned evangelist Neil Mammen observes,

Christians in general are not here to win under any circumstances. Twisting the truth is not what we are “about.” We fundamentally believe that only the objective truth will set us free, so why would we want to believe a lie? What would we gain? It would be self-defeating. True, some Christians are self-deluded and would rather hang on to traditions and the familiar even if it is false. Thinking Christians want to explore all the facts and come to valid conclusions.¹¹



Many Christians thoughtlessly accept Coulter’s most bizarre pronouncements, or – in the interests of being gracious – justify that godlessness when, in fact, Jesus never would. Only truth will set us free. With truth, we can recognize error and pursue change. Without it, we are enslaved to a lie.

¹¹ Neil Mammen, *Jesus Is Involved in Politics! Why Aren’t You? Why Isn’t Your Church?* American Family Association, 2007, 2009, 2010, 2011, pg. 317.

Chapter 9

Reconciliation: Our Ministry as Peacemakers

“Now all things are of God, who has reconciled us to Himself through Jesus Christ, and has given us the ministry of reconciliation.” – 2nd Corinthians 5:18

Our Prince of Peace

Jesus, our Emmanuel (“God with us”), entered our world to reconcile a fallen creation to Himself (Col. 1:19-20). As the Prince of Peace (Isa. 9:6), Jesus calls His disciples to be peacemakers: “Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God” (Mt. 5:9). Consequently, God has given His children a “ministry of reconciliation” as “ambassadors for Christ” (2 Cor. 5:18-20). As the apostle Paul put it, we are to “pursue peace with everyone” (Rom. 12:14).¹

In that universal ministry of reconciliation, speaking the truth in love, we are to present the gospel in a winsome and compelling way, with compassion and comity. As the light of the world and salt of the earth, we are spokesmen for Christ, in word and in deed, who must represent Him as He wishes.

With due deference to Theodore Roosevelt, we should speak softly and carry a big heart. Jesus was quick to proclaim the truth – even the hard truths² – but He continually exhibited compassion indiscriminately to all in need.³ The Sermon on the Mount is replete with maxims to live by which emphasize godliness, deference to others, a spirit of humility, and a goal of reconciliation.⁴

As author and talk show host Alan Colmes observes, “Liberals often appear as ‘bleeding hearts,’ but all hearts should bleed. After all, isn’t the purpose of a heart to pump blood?”⁵ There is indeed a spiritual truth to this physiological phenomenon, although its application is not what Colmes would have in mind.

Using Humor as a Weapon

That spirit of grace and peace, which Jesus and the apostles taught the children of God to live in and exhibit, seems to be missing in Coulter’s commentary and conduct towards her fellow human beings.⁶

In 1999, Coulter declared, “There’s nothing more attractive than a rabid conservative.”⁷ In 2006, on the quest for unlimited freedom of expression, Coulter admitted, “I’ve always told my friends if only I could

¹ Reconciliation is another popular Christian theme for worship. The Promise Keepers’ *Reconciliation Song* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MkOnqLXdDNY>) seeks reconciliation among mankind and Vince Gill’s *Let There Be Peace on Earth* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wv7RXrkiGtK>) asks God to let that reconciliation begin with us. Avalon’s *We Will Stand* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=f7cC1wd5EFY>) proclaims Jesus as the One who unites everyone who believes in Him and Michael W. Smith’s *You Are Holy (Prince of Peace)* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HCuaQCr0hws>) lauds the King of Kings and Prince of Peace.

² See John chapter 6 as but one example.

³ Check out any list of miracles performed by Jesus. Consider, too, His empathy towards the Samaritan woman (John chapter 4) and “publicans and sinners” (Mark 2:13-17).

⁴ See Gary Chapman, *The Five Love Languages: How to Express Heartfelt Commitment to Your Mate*, Northfield Publishers, 2003, and Gary Chapman, *The Five Languages of Apology: How to Experience Healing in all Your Relationships*, Northfield Publishing, 2008.

⁵ Author interview.

⁶ While Coulter is certainly gracious towards her friends and those who agree with her, that comity ends where differences begin.

⁷ Ann Coulter, speech, 6/8/99.

be a black Jewish homosexual – then we could really have some fun! Then I could say anything!”⁸ In 2007, Coulter asserted her own leadership in outré oratory, exclaiming, “I am the illegal alien of commentary. I will do the jokes that no one else will do.”⁹

Ironically, many conservatives – especially emerging youth leaders – trumpet Coulter’s lack of restraint as a new conservative paradigm to be boldly promoted as if it did not defy the traditional conservatism Coulter claims to champion.

Preemptive Promo

Consider Coulter’s choice for an excerpt of her sixth book! Brazen. Boastful. Bullying.

Two days before the release of *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans* (2007), Coulter published a pre-emptive essay to frame the debate.¹⁰ That essay – excerpting what Coulter considered the



key point in her book – emphasizes the accuracy of the themes addressed thus far in this book. Her essay title – “Liberals and the Woman Who Hates Them” – reiterates enmity as the fanatical fuel which drives Coulter. Notice the modifier – “the Woman” – as if she alone of all women hate liberals. Her ego posits herself as the solitary “gyno-American” standing up for truth, justice, and the American way.

The Orwellian memory hole almost immediately came to fore with Coulter making this astonishing claim: “Liberals spend so much time hating, hating, hating that they can’t get anything done. I mean, we all thought that Clinton was a cheap pervert, but we didn’t *hate* him.”¹¹ What happened to “the Woman Who Hates Them?” Or, for that matter, the woman who, in 2000, declared, “If you don’t hate Clinton, and those who labored to keep him in office, you don’t love your country?”

Couldn’t she remember the *title* of her own essay meant to propel her book to the top of the best-seller list? But then, on *Fox & Friends*,¹² Coulter again remembered.

Brian Kilmeade asked, “How could you possibly pull off a book with this type of genre, and this type of theme, Ann Coulter? Where does it come from? The anger? The directness? The bluntness?” Coulter replied, “Thank you, thank you. Pure resentment and hatred.” As she had years earlier, Coulter redefined hate speech: “‘Hate speech’ is telling the truth about liberals.”¹³

Goal: To Be Offensive

Coulter is *deliberately* offensive. In both *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)* (2004) and *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans* Coulter declares that her *goal* is to offend liberals.

The introduction to *Talk* outlined a series of simple rules for arguing with liberals and there is little doubt its author practices what she preaches. The third rule, that you must outrage the enemy, is an accurate

⁸ Gaby Wood, “Lethally Blonde,” *The Observer*, 6/11/06, <http://observer.guardian.co.uk/review/story/0,1794552,00.html>.

⁹ Ann Coulter, *O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/28/07, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,287381,00.html>.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, “Liberals and the Woman Who Hates Them,” Townhall.com, 9/30/07, http://www.townhall.com/Columnists/AnnCoulter/2007/09/30/liberals_and_the_woman_who_hates_them?page=full&comments=true.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, Cleary University, 10/1/07.

¹² Ann Coulter and Brian Kilmeade, *Fox & Friends*, FNC, 10/2/07.

¹³ Ann Coulter, *Newsmax*, 10/2/07, <http://observanda.blogspot.com/2007/10/newsmax-coulter-interview-laugh-abound.html>.

description for the entirety of Coulter's political career. It would be hard to imagine that any other conservative is so passionately hated by the left.

You must outrage the enemy. If the liberal you're arguing with doesn't become speechless with sputtering, impotent rage, you're not doing it right. ... Start with the maximum assertion about liberals and then push the envelope, because, as we know, their evil is incalculable. ... Nothing too extreme can be said about liberals, because it's all true.¹⁴

Going back to 2002, Coulter declared, "It doesn't take much to provoke liberals. But, yes, I do find it fun. Usually I know when I'm baiting them, how I'm baiting them, what they will react to."¹⁵ In *If*, Coulter affirmed: "Uttering lines that send liberals into paroxysms of rage, otherwise known as 'citing facts,' is the spice of life. When I see the hot spittle flying from their mouths and the veins bulging and pulsing above their eyes, well, that's when I feel truly alive."¹⁶

Truly alive?



For some, outrageousness appears to be Coulter's greatest strength, with her admirers citing that trait as a badge of honor. Rush Limbaugh "admires Ann Coulter's ability to outrage liberals."¹⁷ Why has *outrageousness* – rather than honesty, integrity and honor – become so important to a movement which calls itself conservative? The Shock Factor is both profitable and fun.

Author Brad Miner, in *Smear Tactics*, reprises the satirist defense for Coulter's language, asserting that Coulter "is principally a satirist ... She is to the 21st century what Lenny Bruce was to the 20th, a truly outrageous social commentator attempting to make people reexamine basic assumptions."¹⁸ Of course, Coulter explicitly denies this. Changing people's minds, causing people to view issues from a fresh perspective, is not Coulter's goal. Enraging the enemy is her clearly expressed goal. Does Miner believe an enraged mind can be persuaded? In defending Coulter, the usual suspects typically ignore what Coulter herself says. They call her a satirist; she calls herself a polemicist. They say she's only joking; she says she means everything she says. Yet, when she claims to be speaking the truth, they willingly accept as truth her self-evident lies.

Conservative author Michelle Malkin condemns the Left for using the "just kidding" card¹⁹, yet has no problems with conservatives who do so. All the while, Coulter *isn't* "kidding."

Returning to biblical precepts, *the children of God are tasked with speaking the truth in love with the clear objective of achieving reconciliation*. God, through Jesus Christ – and, derivatively, through His human instruments on earth, collectively called the "body of Christ" – is reconciling the *world* to Himself!

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 10.

¹⁵ Aileen Jacobson, "Coulter brings flair and fire from the right," *Newsday*, 8/23/02.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, Crown Forum promo, <http://www.randomhouse.com/crown/catalog/display.pperl?isbn=9780307353450>.

¹⁷ Zev Chafets, "Late-Period Limbaugh," *New York Times Magazine*, 7/6/08, http://www.nytimes.com/2008/07/06/magazine/06Limbaugh-t.html?_r=1&hp=&pagewanted=all&oref=slogin.

¹⁸ Brad Miner, *Smear Tactics: The Liberal Campaign to Defame America*, HarperCollins, 2007, pg. 59.

¹⁹ Michelle Malkin, *Unhinged: Exposing Liberals Gone Wild*, Regnery, 2005, pg. 162.

St. Francis of Assisi's prayer has inspired millions of Christians (and non-Christians) through the ages:²⁰

Lord, make me an instrument of your peace.
Where there is hatred, let me sow love;
where there is injury, pardon;
where there is doubt, faith;
where there is despair, hope;
where there is darkness, light;
and where there is sadness, joy.

O Divine Master, grant that I may not so much seek
to be consoled as to console;
to be understood as to understand;
to be loved as to love.
For it is in giving that we receive;
it is in pardoning that we are pardoned;
and it is in dying that we are born to eternal life. Amen

²⁰ See Sarah MacLachlan's video at <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0VSyuar6oF8>.

Chapter 10

Equality: Self-Evident Truths

“There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus.” – Galatians 3:28

All One in Christ Jesus

When He physically walked the earth, Jesus broke the bonds of parochialism, racism, sexism, and elitism by treating everyone equally. No distinctions. No barriers. No prejudices. Jesus fellowshiped with “sinners” and with those who would become “saints.”

The apostle Paul wrote, “There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus. And if you are Christ’s, then you are Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise” (Gal. 3:28-29). He further emphasized this point to the church at Colossi: “where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcised nor uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave nor free, but Christ is all and in all” (Col. 3:11).¹

In His remarkable prayer on the eve of His Passion, Jesus extended His love and commitment to full equality to all subsequent generations, saying, “I do not pray for these alone, but also for those who will believe in Me through their word; that they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You; that they also may be one in Us, that the world may believe that You sent Me. And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that they may be one just as We are one: I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me” (John 17:20-23).

Yes, Jesus came to share Himself with everyone – to save “the world” (John 3:16) – an *all-inclusive* mission. As one typical American put it, “The beauty of Christianity is that whether the believer is man, woman, liberal, conservative, military, civilian, gay or straight, we are all loved by God.”²

America’s Founders acknowledged these truths in our Declaration of Independence: “We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights ...”³

The Perfect Family

Coulter makes the bold assertion that “[liberals] deny the most important thing we know about ourselves: that we are moral beings in God’s image.”⁴ Scripture affirms our moral creation in His image, but reality

¹ Worship music is replete with affirmations that we are all equal before the cross, that salvation is available to all, and that in the end all will worship the Lamb of God. One typical example is Don Moen’s *Hallelujah to the Lamb* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mIa2E8UtsIU>) which notes that people from “every tribe, every tongue, every people, every land” will worship God.

² Chad Lozier, Letter to the Editor, *Stars and Stripes*, 5/20/09.

³ See Gary T. Amos, *Defending the Constitution: How the Bible and Christianity Influenced the Writing of the Declaration of Independence*, Wolgemuth and Hyatt, 1989; Thomas Sowell, *Race and Culture: A World View*, Basic Books, 1995; David Barton, *Original Intent: The Courts, the Constitution, & Religion*, WallBuilder Press, 1996, www.wallbuilders.org, and Jerry Newcombe, *The Book That Made America: How the Bible Formed Our Nation*, Nordskog, 2009.

⁴ Ann Coulter, Foreword for Rev. Donald Wildmon, *Speechless: Silencing the Christians*, Pathway Book Service, 2009, pg. viii.

denies her conclusion about liberals. Seemingly well-versed in Scripture, Coulter cites Galatians 3:28 in her perennial column on Kwanzaa, yet, she fails to apply it in her own life.

Good Housekeeping once asked Coulter to write an essay, one which it later rejected (see chapter 19). In that essay, included in her book, *How to Talk to a Liberal*, Coulter wrote of her perfect “functional” family, in contradistinction to, well, dysfunctional ones. Coulter wrote:

Alas, I can’t write magazine essays about being abused or neglected, because I never had those opportunities. ... My father wasn’t a racist, my mother was never arrested, and my brother wasn’t a cross-dresser. In other words, I come from a disadvantaged, minority background: I am the product of an intact and loving family. My parents are Caucasian, native-born, English-speaking, happily married, monogamous, and self-supporting. The best word to describe my early family life would be “functional.”

Four intriguing aspects emerge from this short excerpt. First, Coulter considers her family to be *abnormal* because it is *normal* (most other families are, in her view, dysfunctional). Second, she infers that misbehavior by her family members would stigmatize *her*. Third, she asserts that dysfunctional families lack love. (The biblical patriarchs would surely find that premise amusing.)

Finally, consider Coulter’s *criteria* for normalcy or functionality:

- Caucasian
- Native-born
- English-speaking
- Happily married
- Monogamous
- Self-supporting



This paleo-conservative (mono-cultural) list begins with two items which are accidents of birth but apparently take primacy over the rest (revealing a not so subtle form of racism). In other words, Coulter is **not** the product of a single-parent, foreign-speaking, non-Caucasian immigrant family on welfare.

Conspicuous by its absence on her list is any reference to God or morality, the focus of her rejected *Good Housekeeping* essay. Presumably anyone achieving high marks in all six areas is, *ipso facto*, a moral person.

Racism

Despite her assertions of equality, Coulter has a tendency to express racist views. In 1996, she lauded white Europeans while belittling minorities: “It’s extremely difficult to come in if you’re coming from a Western European country. However, if you are from a Third World country, ‘Welcome.’ If your genetic ancestors did not invent the wheel, ‘Oh, well, let them come in.’”⁵

⁵ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 8/23/96.

The following year, she suggested juvenile delinquents are all black: "There is one sort of type of criminal that a public humiliation might work particularly well with are the juvenile delinquents, a lot of whom consider it a badge of honor to be sent to juvenile detention. And it might not be such a cool thing, in the hood, to be flogged publicly."⁶

In 2002, she suggested that Halle Berry won her best-actress Oscar for being white enough: "Large-breasted, slightly cocoa women with idealized Caucasian features finally have a chance in Hollywood."⁷

American Indians have fared poorly in Coulter's worldview: "The Indians were savages. ... they were nomads, scalping people. ... We [white people] don't eat people. We don't engage in human sacrifice."⁸ On that occasion, she added, "Thank God the white man did win or we would not have the sort of equality and freedom, or life, that we have now." In May 2012, Coulter denigrated Indians with her disparagement of Harvard Law School professor Elizabeth Herring Warren Mann, who had claimed to be 1/32nd Indian to further her career. Comanche David Yeagley called Coulter's words "most degrading."⁹

One column attacking Ward Churchill was entitled "The little Injun that could."¹⁰ Another column employed racism towards Gov. Bobby Jindal: "Even Gov. Bobby Jindal, whom I suppose I should note was the first Indian-American to give the Republican response to a president's speech, began with an encomium to the first black president. (Wasn't Bobby great in 'Slumdog Millionaire'?)"¹¹

Coulter has not neglected Hispanics. Opposing immigration reform, Coulter referred to Hispanics as *roaches*. Her essay title: "Bush's America: Roach Motel."¹²

Following 9/11, Coulter's ire was raised against all Arabs and all Muslims. At the Conservative Political Action Conference in 2006, Coulter said, "Post-9/11 our philosophy should be: Raghead talks tough? Raghead faces consequences."¹³ Just days later, Coulter unrepentantly amplified her remarks:

If you don't want to get shot by the police, Mahmoud Ahmadinejad, then don't point a toy gun at them. Or, as I believe our motto should be after 9/11: Jihad monkey talks tough; jihad monkey takes the consequences. Sorry, I realize that's offensive. How about "camel jockey"? What? Now what'd I say? Boy, you tent merchants sure are touchy. Grow up, would you?¹⁴

Coulter's editorial home, *Human Events*, redacted one word – "Arab" – from one controversial essay: "Press passes can't be that hard to come by if the White House allows that old Arab Helen Thomas to sit within yards of the president."¹⁵ Coulter's seventh book, *If Democrats Hay Any Brains* (2007), provided this gem: "Maybe I'm winning the camel jockeys over."¹⁶

⁶ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/22/97.

⁷ Ann Coulter, "Live by the breast, die by the breast," 3/27/02.

⁸ Ann Coulter, Oregon State University, 11/19/01.

⁹ David Yeagley, "Elizabeth Warren: The Final Word," *Bad Eagle Journal*, 5/11/12, <http://www.badeagle.com/2012/05/11/elizabeth-warren-the-final-word/>.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, "The little Injun that could," 2/9/05.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, "The Cal Ripken President," 2/25/09.

¹² Ann Coulter, "Bush's America: Roach Motel," 6/6/07.

¹³ Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/10/06.

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, "Muslim Bites Dog," 2/15/06.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, "Republicans, Bloggers and Gays, Oh My," 2/23/05.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Hay Any Brains, They'd Be Dangerous*, Crown Forum, 2007.

White supremacy was an underlying theme in several Coulter columns. For example, Coulter wrote, “And manifestly, white men have no political power in modern America. They just rush in to save us when the nation is attacked.”¹⁷

Coulter’s absolutism on race reached a heightened level of intensity during the controversy surrounding the arrest of Harvard Professor Henry Gates and his spurious charge of racial profiling. Coulter repeatedly asserted that racial profiling *does not exist* – but *should*!

In one remarkable essay, Coulter claimed, “In modern America, the alleged ‘victim’ is always really the aggressor, and the alleged ‘aggressor’ is always the true victim.”¹⁸ Always? Coulter denied the existence of *any* racial profiling by police officers and, in contemporaneous interviews, *defended* a white racist cop who had written a racist email for publication about the incident, calling blacks “jungle monkeys.”¹⁹ Her essay concluded even more absurdly, “Before liberals declare that this is a case of racial profiling and move on, how about liberals produce one provable example of racial profiling that isn’t a hoax?”

Anti-Semitism

Coulter has a long history of anti-Semitism, stretching back to at least the early 1990s. In his first anti-conservative book, David Brock “outed” Coulter as an anti-Semite, stating, “That she wanted to leave her New York law firm ‘to get away from all these Jews’ was one of her gentler remarks.”²⁰ Conservatives were rightly skeptical. Since then, Coulter’s commentary has lent ever-greater credence to Brock’s charges. This sampling suggests Brock was on to something:

In addition to having a number of family deaths among them, the Democrats’ other big idea – too nuanced for a bumper sticker – is that many of them have Jewish ancestry. There’s Joe Lieberman: Always Jewish. Wesley Clark: Found Out His Father Was Jewish in College. John Kerry: Jewish Since He Began Presidential Fund-Raising. Howard Dean: Married to a Jew. Al Sharpton: Circumcised. Even Hillary Clinton claimed to have unearthed some evidence that she was a Jew – along with the long lost evidence that she was a Yankees fan. And that, boys and girls, is how the Jews survived thousands of years of persecution: by being susceptible to pandering.²¹

Racial and ethnic stereotyping (variations on “groupthink”) permeate Ann Coulter’s worldview. Since 9/11, Coulter’s anti-Semitism has erupted with a vengeance. Mocking Senator Lieberman’s religious orthodoxy, Coulter gratuitously contends:

All the Democrats oppose the war. And all the Democrats who took a position on the war before it began were for it, but now believe that everything Bush did from that moment forward has been bad! bad! bad! This is with the exception of Joe Lieberman who, as an observant Jew, is forbidden to backpedal after sundown on Fridays.²²

In defending Mel Gibson’s superb, but controversial, *The Passion of the Christ*, Coulter subtly blames Jews for the Holocaust and blatantly blames liberals for terrorism:

¹⁷ Ann Coulter, “The color of demagoguery,” 1/16/02.

¹⁸ Ann Coulter, “How About a National Conversation on Race Hoaxes?” 7/29/09.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, *Larry King Live*, CNN, 7/30/09.

²⁰ David Brock, *Blinded by the Right: The Conscience of an Ex-Conservative*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 182.

²¹ Ann Coulter, “Party of Ideas,” 11/20/03.

²² Ann Coulter, “Queer Party Friends,” 1/21/04, reprinted in *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 107.

Imitating the ostrich-like posture of certain German Jews who ignored the growing danger during Hitler's rise to power, today's liberals are deliberately blind to the real threats of violence that surround us. Their narcissistic self-image requires absolute solicitude toward angry savages plotting acts of terrorism. The only people who scare them are the ones who worship a Jew.²³

Coulter's deliberate parallelism is unmistakable. Since 9/11, Coulter blames solely the left for terrorism and even equates liberalism with terrorism and treason. Here, with characteristic flair, Coulter uses anti-Semitic rhetoric to refute charges of anti-Semitism. What a novel approach!



At one stroke, Coulter demonizes Arabs, Jews and liberals. Coulter accuses liberals of anti-Semitism: "at least we finally have liberals on record opposing anti-Semitic violence." (Would that include Jewish liberals?) Amazingly, Coulter's most applauded line at CPAC 2004 should stop anyone in their tracks: "At least Clark is getting the hang of being a Democrat – he's starting to blame everything on the Jews."

Here, Coulter denigrates Democratic presidential candidates for "claiming" to be Jewish: "Not only that, but many Democrats have cracker-barrel humble origins stories and a Jew or lesbian in the family."²⁴ One wonders if Coulter finds a moral equivalency between Jews and homosexuals? Between a faith/race/culture and a behavior?

Only Coulter could pen *these* words – and escape censure:²⁵

There's no consensus position, but the Democrats are pretty sure the real reason we went to Iraq was one of the following:

- Bush family's connections to the Saudis,
- Halliburton,
- the Carlyle Group,
- something about the Texas Rangers needing more left-handed pitching,
- the neoconservatives,
- the Straussians,
- oil,
- the Jews,
- oily Jews.

Oily Jews?

In her fifth book, *Godless* (2006), Coulter called Monica Lewinsky a "fat Jewish girl"²⁶ – an unnecessary non-sequitur in any purportedly godly book.

²³ Ann Coulter, "The Passion of the Liberal," 3/3/04, reprinted in *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 163.

²⁴ Ann Coulter, "Party of Ideas," 11/20/03, reprinted in *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 100.

²⁵ Ann Coulter, "Inmates 'Have A Plan' To Run The Asylum," 10/20/04.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, 2006, pg. 4.


Taken together, the opening and closing sentences of a 2009 Coulter column far overshadowed any political point she was making about identity politics: “With the Supreme Court's decision in *Ricci v. DeStefano* this week, we can now report that Sonia Sotomayor is even crazier than Ruth Bader Ginsburg. ... This suggests that a wise Jewess, due to the richness of her life experiences, might come to a better judgment than a Latina judge would.”²⁷

In a startling essay, Coulter asserted that Rev. Barry Lynn is a fake Christian minister (once again, because he is a liberal), even suggesting he might really be a Jewish fifth columnist who infiltrated the church to destroy it. Her parenthetical joke plays poorly: “(The first person to post Barry Lynn's bar mitzvah photos or birth announcement (mazel tov!) wins a free copy of my latest book, *Guilty: Liberal Victims' and Their Assault on America*.)”²⁸

In an equally astonishing entry on her own personal website, captioned “**Who said Jews are smart?**” Coulter wrote: “NYT Letter of the Day!: ‘Astroturf’ refers to protesters who disagree with me and therefore are not rational.”²⁹


Sexism

Coulter's tour for *If Democrats Had Any Brains* (2007) was launched amidst another Coulter controversy, this time over her misogynist anti-voting views. In an interview with the *New York Observer*, Coulter said, “If we took away women's right to vote, we'd never have to worry about another Democrat president. It's kind of a pipe dream, it's a personal fantasy of mine, but I don't think it's going to happen. And it is a good way of making the point that women are voting so stupidly, at least single women.”³⁰



Ann Coulter

@AnnCoulter



Advice 2 YR: Buy my books, books on tape, action figure & soon-to-be-released Ann Coulter abstinence kit (8 × 10 glossy of Susan Estrich)

The media was shocked, shocked – forgetting that Coulter had been expressing those sentiments for over a decade! Four years earlier, Coulter wrote, “It would be a much better country if women did not vote. That is simply a fact.”³¹ Two years before that, Coulter said, “I think [women] should be armed but should not [be allowed to] vote. ... The problem with women voting – and your Communists will back me up on this – is that, you know, women have no capacity to understand how money is earned. They have a lot of ideas on how to spend it.”³² One of her *Human Events* essays in 2000 was titled, “Repeal the 19th Amendment.” It doesn't get any clearer than that.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, “So Much for Wise Latinas,” 7/1/09.

²⁸ Ann Coulter, “Kathleen Parker: The Barry Lynn of the South,” 8/12/09.

²⁹ Ann Coulter entry, www.anncoulter.com, 8/25/09, 2:17 p.m. (emphasis in the original).

³⁰ George Gurley, “Coulter Culture,” *New York Observer*, 10/2/07, <http://www.observer.com/2007/coulter-culture>.

³¹ Ann Coulter, quoted by Jonathan Freedland, “An appalling magic,” *The Guardian*, 5/17/03, <http://www.guardian.co.uk/media/2003/may/17/pressandpublishing.usnews/print>.

³² Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 2/26/01.

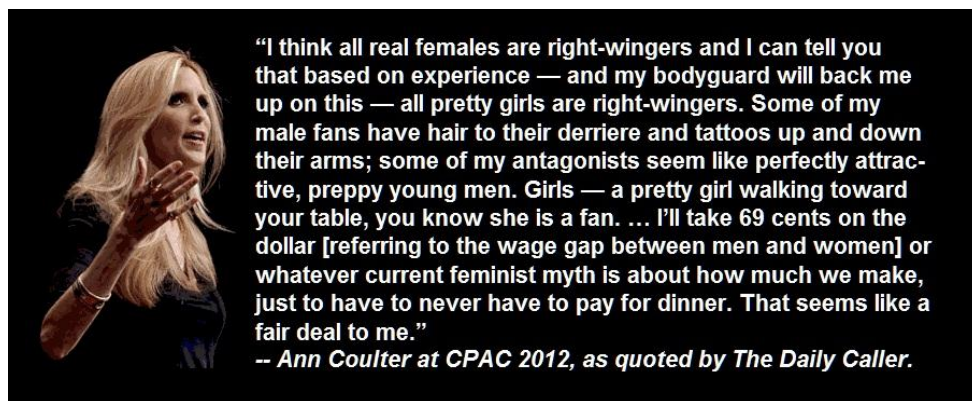
But Coulter's misogyny predates even that essay by a decade. In 1991, *National Review* approached Coulter to write an essay on "Feminist Legal Theory." The editor, John O'Sullivan, rejected Coulter's essay, suggesting she go on Valium. Coulter later published about half of that essay in her fourth book, *How to Talk to a Liberal* (2004). Coulter introduced the essay with these words: "Far from a right-wing cabal greasing the wheels for young conservatives, *National Review* would not even publish my article on 'Feminist Legal Theory' in 1991 after soliciting the piece."

Several remarkable aspects emerge from this diatribe rejected by *National Review*. First, Coulter's intense enmity towards feminists. Second, Coulter boasts about that essay and claims she is a victim of censorship by conservatives. Perhaps most remarkable, the editor who rejected that essay *now* regards Coulter as a *heroine*!

We only have half of Coulter's long-winded essay and only part of *National Review* editor O'Sullivan's correspondence, but what Coulter does publish in *Talk* is instructive. In that legal essay, Coulter passionately declared: "I hate the feminists. The real reason I loathe and detest feminists ..." and "I would like to add that feminists are also marauding, bloodthirsty vipers ..."

Far from the censorship Coulter implied, many factors explain the magazine's rejection. First and foremost, *National Review* requested *legal* analysis by a young conservative *lawyer* of "Feminist Legal Theory." Coulter wrote a non-legal diatribe against feminism. Coulter's linguistic hyperventilation proved too much for *National Review*. The magazine asked for a rewrite to adhere to its submission guidelines. O'Sullivan's critique asked for a rewrite to – of all things – *focus on the law*!

O'Sullivan wrote: "Greatly simplifying, I would like to suggest that the structure of the article (which would include most of what you have but this time ON VALIUM) would be as follows:" O'Sullivan then provided four points, three of which are *law*-related. Coulter's concluding (flippant) paragraph in this section: "There was obviously nothing to be done. Confusing 'feminist legal theory' with an article about 'the law' is like confusing *Plessy v. Ferguson* with Sarah Ferguson, former Duchess of York and current Weight Watchers spokesman.



Coulter's hatred has only intensified with age. From an essay in 2000, "That is the theme of the Million Mom March: 'I don't need a brain — I have a womb.'"³³

In *Slander* (2002), Coulter wrote: "More than any of their other hate speech, the left's attacks on women for being ugly tell you everything. There is nothing so irredeemably cruel as an attack on a woman for her

³³ Ann Coulter, "For Womb the Bell Tolls," 5/12/00.

looks. Attacking a female for being ugly is a hideous thing, always inherently vicious.”³⁴ Having condemned those who attack “people personally for what they look like,” Coulter attacked people for what they look like, with Bella Abzug being her poster girl for liberals.

In a 2004 essay beginning “Here at the Spawn of Satan convention in Boston,” Coulter complimented liberal pulchritude with these words; “the corn-fed, no make-up, natural fiber, no-bra needing, sandal-wearing, hirsute, somewhat fragrant hippie-chick pie wagons they call ‘women’ at the Democratic National Convention.”³⁵

Coulter continued, “Ugly feminists ... impotently rail against “sexist men” and ‘sexual harassment’ while simultaneously promoting the view that sex has no sacred purpose, it’s just for fun.”³⁶ On Cindy Sheehan, Coulter criticized “her itsy-bitsy, squeaky voice”³⁷ and said “The only sort of authority Cindy Sheehan has is the uncanny ability to demonstrate, by example, what body types should avoid wearing shorts in public.”³⁸

Also in 2004, Coulter stated, “I’m so pleased with my gender. We’re not that bright.”³⁹ In 2006, Coulter wrote, “In 1992, Chelmsford (Massachusetts) High School hired Suzi Landolphi to give a mandatory “AIDS Awareness presentation” to the entire school, apparently designed to reach the one or two human beings on Planet Earth who hadn’t heard about AIDS. ... Miss Landolph, to put it as charitably as possible, is physically repulsive in appearance.”⁴⁰

In 2006, Coulter wrote, “You know, when I tour college campuses, I always find that the prettiest girls in the room are the ones in the College Republicans.”⁴¹ Asked by the *Baltimore Sun*, “How would your career be different if you looked like Molly Ivins?” Coulter answered: “I’d be a lot uglier.”⁴²

In 2007, “Answering a teenager’s question about the best way to become politically involved, Coulter answered: ‘Get your parents to buy my books, my books on tape, my action figure, and the soon-to-be-released Ann Coulter abstinence kit (which is an 8 x 10 glossy of Susan Estrich), important for boys your age.’”⁴³

Elitism: Letting the Cream Rise

Here we see character traits which have been evident for at least the past decade: pride, perfectionism, elitism – and scorn for those who do not measure up to Coulter’s standards.

In 1997, Mary Jacoby wrote a particularly perceptive profile of Coulter in *Capital Style*, observing: “Coulter, nevertheless, seems to crave media attention.”⁴⁴ A colleague of Coulter’s at the time explained that the “mass of contradictions” in her life is linked to her desire for fame: “Part of it has to do with being a celebrity, but part of it has to do with being the kind of person who so wants to be a celebrity.”⁴⁵

³⁴ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 17.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, “Put the speakers in a cage,” *World Net Daily*, 7/26/04.

³⁶ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, 2006, pg. 9.

³⁷ *Ibid*, pg. 103.

³⁸ *Ibid*, pg. 128.

³⁹ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 9/23/04.

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, 2006, pg. 13.

⁴¹ <http://www.tv.com/ann-coulter/person/204502/biography.html>, accessed 10/2/07.

⁴² “What I Did on My Summer Vacation,” *Baltimore Sun*, 8/2/06.

⁴³ Ann Coulter, *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They’d Be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2007, pg. 88.

⁴⁴ Mary Jacoby, “The Pundettes,” *Capital Style*, December 1997, p 44.

⁴⁵ Author interview.

Dan Travers, a long-time friend of Coulter's, said "She likes the attention and the fans. She thrives on the whole thing."⁴⁶

But Coulter's quest for glory seems to include a heart full of hatred for humanity. Coulter does indeed seem to be "unbelievably harsh. Almost heartless," according to Jacoby. "She seems to despise weakness of any kind."⁴⁷ That pattern re-emerges time and time again. Coulter's high school yearbook photo sported this caption: "I'm against homogenizers in art, in politics, in every walk of life. I want the cream to rise." Clearly, Coulter considers herself the *crème-de-la-crème*.

While the world mourned the death of Princess Diana, Coulter erupted with this vicious attack: "She's ordinary and pathetic and confessional" Coulter then exalted herself, shouting, "I've never had bulimia! I've never had an affair! I've never had a divorce! So I don't think she's better than I am."⁴⁸

With the nomination of Harriet Miers for Supreme Court Justice, Coulter's snobbery again showed up: "[Harriet Miers] is something new: a complete mediocrity."⁴⁹ Ironically, a woman championing character and conservative Christianity denounced a Christian conservative woman with character.

"Correct" credentials are critical for Coulter. Coulter derided Miers for not going to an elite law school.⁵⁰ A few years later, she attacked Keith Olbermann's credentials,⁵¹ claiming his Cornell degree was not as prestigious as hers. Often, Coulter uses phrases such as, "I never heard of [so-and-so]" or "Nobody ever heard of [so-and-so]," as if notoriety were the overriding credential for offering an opinion on something.

A review of the Acknowledgements pages of Coulter's books is perhaps most telling. The conservative cream has risen to the top in the face and voice of Coulter and her cohorts. Apart from family members and those directly involved in publishing her columns and books, Coulter's Acknowledgments read like a Who's Who of professionals and elites, movers and shakers, from across a panoply of professions: politics and law, media and entertainment, academia and science, and business and banking.

Opportunism is the method, enmity the motive, and published polemics the means for Coulter's rise to stardom. In each of her post-9/11 books, Coulter provides a panoply of pejoratives targeting every imaginable group (and a host of individuals). Coulter skewers the "enemy of the moment" at will, with abandon, without mercy and, often, without cause.

Although Coulter claims to eschew groupthink,⁵² groupthink pervades her thinking. Far from regarding all human beings as self-evidently equal in God's eyes and, therefore worthy of the civility due to anyone created in His image, Coulter uses racial, ethnic, gender, and class constructs as criteria to judge the worth of individuals and whole groups of people. Her complex criteria matrix is further complicated by political partisanship and personal prevarication.

In contrast, Paul advised that we esteem others better than ourselves (Phil. 2:3).

⁴⁶ Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, pg. D4.

⁴⁷ Mary Jacoby, "The Pundettes," *Capital Style*, December 1997, p 45.

⁴⁸ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/12/97.

⁴⁹ Ann Coulter, *Newsmax*, 10/3/05.

⁵⁰ Ann Coulter, "This is What 'Advice and Consent' Means," 10/5/05.

⁵¹ Ann Coulter, "Olbermann's Plastic Ivy," 3/4/09.

⁵² Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

Chapter 11

Life: Choosing the Abundant Life

“I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly.”
– John 10:10

Jesus’ Gospel of Life

John 3:16 encapsulates the gospel of Christ with the most recognized words in human history: “For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.” Motivated by the selfless love of God, Jesus entered our world as a newborn Babe to die on the cross so that we might live forever with Him in Paradise. As the Good Shepherd who demonstrated sacrificial love, Jesus told His disciples that He came to give us an *abundant* life.

God’s message is consistent: He offers His children eternal life so that we might have a living relationship with Him forever. In fact, He exhorted the ancient Israelites to “choose life, that both you and your descendants may live” (Deut. 30:19).

The American Experiment was predicated upon the premise, the biblical belief, that every single human being is created in the very image of God and, consequently, every single human being is endowed with certain inalienable rights, foremost among them the right to life.¹ This sanctity of human life forms the very foundation of America’s political institutions.²

Anti-Abortion

Coulter is a fierce advocate for human life – up to a point! Where her politics or predilections diverge, she invariably subordinates pro-life principles to partisanship passions or personal pursuits.

Coulter wrote a remarkably cogent and insightful essay for *Human Life Review*,³ published in 1992. Her essay, entitled “Why Nobody is Really Pro-Choice,” became anthologized in many forums for its incisive insights into the debate over human life in the womb.

Adapted from a speech before a Roman Catholic women’s group,⁴ Coulter’s essay was largely right on target. Coulter used her own version of the Socratic method, asking and answering her own questions. “Can it be that a fetus is not a life until it emerges from the womb? ... Can it be that life does not begin until birth because the child is still dependent on another? ... [Is] viability the survival-on-its-own definition of human life [viable]? ... how do people normally react when there is a possibility that they are killing a human?”

¹ See Pope John Paul II, *Evangelium Vitae* (Gospel of Life), 1995; Joni Eareckson Tada, *When Is It Right to Die? Suicide, Euthanasia, Suffering, Mercy*, Zondervan, 1992, and Scott Klusendorf, *The Case for Life: Equipping Christians to Engage the Culture*, Crossway Books, 2009, www.caseforlife.com. See also Every Life is Beautiful at <http://www.everylifeisbeautiful.com/>.

² See Gary Amos, *Defending the Declaration: How the Bible and Christianity Influenced the Writing of the Declaration of Independence*, Wolgemuth and Hyatt, 1989.

³ Ann Coulter, “Who Nobody Is Really Pro-Choice,” *Human Life Review*, Spring 1992, pp. 7-20.

⁴ “This article is adapted from her recent talk to a Roman Catholic women’s group in New Canaan, Connecticut.” – *Ibid.*, footnote, pg. 7.

Within her discourse, Coulter made several astute observations. First, the pro-choice rationale peculiarly applies solely to the issue of abortion. As Coulter wrote, “Because precepts that are necessary to support abortion are specifically and uniformly rejected in analogous situations, there is reason to doubt the sincerity of the ‘pro-choice’ position.”

Second, with astonishing advances in medical technology, the definition of human life is constantly redefined – always in such a manner as to exclude the fetus. Coulter wrote: “A peculiar thing about the argument that life begins at viability is that it always ends being self-defining ... Human life comes to be defined as whatever the fetus, and the fetus alone, is not.”

Third, the burden of proof should be upon those seeking to take life that the life taken is not human. Regardless of one’s definition of “human,” a life of *some* kind is being killed. Coulter wrote: “And that is the *least* that can be said about a developing fetus: it might be a human life. ... Every time an abortion takes place, *something* is killed.”

However, Coulter failed to grasp a critical point. People tend to compartmentalize everything, from their physical, mental, emotional, spiritual spheres of life to the employment of situational ethics and the application of abstract principles in the real world. This application of abstract principles to specific situations and concrete circumstances can prove elusive. To this day, Coulter ignores the human tendency toward compartmentalization and doublethink (cognitive dissonance) and fails to grasp that people can hold pro-life views, yet succumb to situational ethics when it becomes personal – *the very thing Coulter does in her own commentary*.

While a pundit on MSNBC in 1996-1997, Coulter repeatedly reaffirmed her anti-abortion views, resurrecting many of the arguments noted above. To her repertoire, she added admonitions against euthanasia and assisted suicide. Coulter insists, “I am totally pro-life.”⁵ But is she?

Pro-Death Penalty

Anti-abortion Christians are divided over the death penalty. One side, predominantly Catholic, holds the “*consistent* life ethic,” which regards all human life as sacred and thus opposes capital punishment and, often, war itself. The other side, predominantly Protestant, advocates the “*innocent* life ethic,” which favors capital punishment both as a deterrent and as a means of holding people accountable for their actions. Regardless of which side a pro-lifer inhabits, Coulter’s extreme views must be anathema.



Coulter’s own adoption of the “innocent life ethic” takes some startling twists and turns. For instance, she has repeatedly offered *justifications for the murder of abortionists* and defended websites which identified the names and addresses of abortionists for the express purpose of *targeting them for assassination*.

Of the murder of abortionists, Coulter said, “Those few abortionists were shot, or, depending on your point of view, had a procedure with a rifle performed on them. I’m not justifying it, but I do understand how it happened.”⁶

⁵ Emily Freund, “Ann Coulter: She May Be Right ...” *Westchester WAG*, October 2002.

Regarding the targeting of abortionists, Coulter penned an essay which appeared on the sixth anniversary of the Oklahoma City Bombing, writing, “The anti-abortion Web site Nuremberg Files is an excellent concept (<http://lancasterlife.com/NurembergFiles>). It provides a list of abortionists in anticipation of ‘the day when these people will be charged in PERFECTLY LEGAL COURTS once the tide of this nation’s opinion turns against the wanton slaughter of God’s children (as it surely will).’”⁷

The *Washington Post* noted her nonsense: “Ann [Coulter] is OUT THERE, that’s for sure. Did anyone check out her recent column defending the executions of abortion-providers? Epater les bourgeois, I guess. Or, Look Ma, No Sense!”⁸ In another speech, Coulter justified killing abortionists. She said that she would not personally take such extreme actions, but she would not condemn those who do.⁹

Furthermore, Coulter has *defended the execution of prisoners for crimes they did not commit!* She once declared, “Sometimes people are innocent of the crime they were sentenced to death for, but perhaps not all crimes.”¹⁰ Investment banker Judith Aidoo then briefly lectured Coulter on the law, specifically, “exact justice.” She also favors capital punishment for *teenagers*: “I enthusiastically embrace the death penalty [for 14-year-olds convicted of murder].”¹¹

Coulter even defended a Democrat – of My Lai Massacre infamy – for the wanton slaughter of innocent civilians, saying, “Even on the worst version, I think it’s a little scurrilous to sit back and attack [Bob Kerrey]. That’s why they say ‘War is hell.’ Civilians get killed.”¹²

George Tiller’s Murder

Tragically, late-term abortionist George Tiller was murdered *in church* on May 31, 2009. Christian and pro-life organizations immediately condemned this heinous act.¹³ Coulter, who is the face of Christianity for millions of people, did the exact opposite!

Not necessarily coincidental, just weeks earlier Coulter targeted Tiller in an attack against President Obama, writing, “Being such a prestigious institution, Notre Dame could probably get famed partial-birth abortion practitioner George Tiller to do the demonstration at next year’s graduation. Obama could help –

⁶ Ann Coulter, Reclaiming America for Christ Conference, Ft. Lauderdale, FL, 3/3/07. Coulter said something similar at a Values Voter Summit in Washington, D.C.: “For two decades after Roe, no abortion clinic doctors were killed. But immediately after Planned Parenthood v. Casey, after working within the system did not work, produced no results...for the first time an abortion doctor was killed. A few more abortion clinic workers were killed in the next few years. I’m not justifying it, but I understand when you take democracy away from people, some of them will react violently. The total number of deaths attributable to Roe were seven abortion clinic workers and 40 million unborn babies.” (See http://www.publiceye.org/christian_right/values-voters/Values%20Voters-09-04.html#TopOfPage.) See Daniel Borchers, “Ann Coulter Speeches Scrubbed by Conservative Groups,” *Bradblog*, 5/1/07, <http://www.bradblog.com/?p=4476>.

⁷ Ann Coulter, “The abortion exception to the Flynt Amendment,” 4/19/01.

⁸ Lloyd Grove, “The Reliable Source – Live,” *Washington Post*, 5/4/01.

⁹ Ann Coulter, speech, 11/15/01.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 11/9/96.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/10/97.

¹² Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 4/26/01.

¹³ See “FRC Condemns the Murder of George Tiller,” Family Research Council Press Release, 5/31/09: “We are stunned at today’s news. As Christians we pray and look toward the end of all violence and for the saving of souls, not the taking of human life. George Tiller was a man who we publicly sought to stop through legal and peaceful means. We strongly condemn the actions taken today by this vigilante killer and we pray for the Tiller family and for the nation that we might once again be a nation that values all human life, both born and unborn.” See also, “Dr. Dobson Condemns Tiller Slaying,” Focus on the Family Statement, 6/1/09: “We are shocked by the murder of George Tiller, and we categorically condemn the act of vigilantism and violence that took his life. America has from its foundation respected the rule of law, by which every citizen is guaranteed life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. Those constitutional rights are forfeited only when crimes have been committed, and the perpetrator is charged and found guilty by a jury of his or her peers in a court of law.”

inasmuch as Tiller the abortionist is a close friend of Health and Human Services Secretary Kathleen Sebelius.”¹⁴

In her unrepentant, dispassionate, and calculatedly clever column,¹⁵ Coulter castigated Tiller, the recent murder victim, and virtually *celebrated* his murder. Her lengthy attack against the victim concluded with a cute but irresponsible formulation:

The official Web page of the ELCA instructs: “A developing life in the womb does not have an absolute right to be born.” As long as we’re deciding who does and doesn’t have an “absolute right to be born,” who’s to say late-term abortionists have an “absolute right” to live?

I wouldn’t kill an abortionist myself, but I wouldn’t want to impose my moral values on others. No one is *for* shooting abortionists. But how will criminalizing men making difficult, often tragic, decisions be an effective means of achieving the goal of reducing the shootings of abortionists?

Following the moral precepts of liberals, I believe the correct position is: If you don’t believe in shooting abortionists, then don’t shoot one.

In a chilling clarification of her views, several weeks later Coulter boldly stated, “I don’t really like to think of it as a murder. It was terminating Tiller in the 203rd trimester.”¹⁶ Morally tone-deaf, Coulter added a macabre twist: “I’ve noticed there haven’t been a lot of [conservatives] talking about [abortion]. I’d like to think it’s because they’re hung over from the ‘Hurray, George Tiller is Dead Party.’”¹⁷

Award-winning radio talk show host Don Kroah adopted a far more sensible approach: “No one in his right mind would endorse this kind of outrage.”¹⁸ Blockbuster talk show host Bill O’Reilly declared, “Clear-thinking Americans should condemn the murder of late term abortionist Tiller,”¹⁹ adding, “Every American condemns the Tiller murder.”²⁰ Not every American, it would appear. Tiller’s murderer, and all those who defend him, deny both the *humanity* of those created in His image and the *divinity* of our Creator. (To date, neither Kroah nor O’Reilly have criticized Coulter for her views.)

Coulter even asserts that murdering abortionists is a *political* act, writing, “abortion clinic violence is more akin to the Tiananmen Square protests in Communist China than any liberal riot in America.”²¹

The consequences of Coulter’s rhetoric can be literally lethal, especially when deliberately targeted against a personal or professional foe. Actress, author, and activist Lydia Cornell experienced Coulter’s wrath which jeopardized the lives of Cornell and her family:

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, “Notre Dame Holds First Alan Keyes Fundraiser,” 5/20/09.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, “49 Million to Five,” 6/3/09.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, *The O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/22/09.

¹⁷ In her eighth book, *Demonic* (2011), Coulter wrote: “But more important, abortion clinic violence should not be filed under ‘Political Violence’ at all. It should be filed under ‘Things Liberals Won’t Let Americans Vote On.’...When there is no legal process for pro-lifers to pursue to outlaw abortion – unlike every policy liberals violently protest – some pro-lifers will inevitably respond to lawlessness with lawlessness. ... In the first few years after [Planned Parenthood v. Casey], about six more people were killed in attacks on abortion clinics. Most of the abortionists were shot or, depending upon your point of view, had a procedure performed on them with a rifle. ... There were no more constitutional options left to fight judicial tyranny on the little matter of mass murder,” she concludes. “Thus, abortion clinic violence is more akin to the Tiananmen Square protests in Communist China than any liberal riot in America. Want to stop violence at abortion clinics? Repeal Roe and let Americans vote.”

¹⁸ Don Kroah, *The Don Kroah Show*, WAVA, 6/1/09.

¹⁹ Bill O’Reilly, *The O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/1/09.

²⁰ Bill O’Reilly, *The O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/2/09.

²¹ Ann Coulter, *Demonic: How the Liberal Mob is Endangering America*, Crown Forum, 2011, pg. 207.

Ann Coulter posted my personal, unlisted home family phone number on the front page of her website and kept it up for an entire year. She launched her attack dogs on me with the cryptic admonition: “Death is sexier than Lydia Cornell ... wait until I tell her about the death camps I have planned for liberals!” As a result, I received death threats, people coming to my door, our trash cans were lit on fire ... and my children had the wits scared out of them when they opened the door and caught someone in a skull cap going through our mail.²²

Coulter’s Death Wishes

Beginning in the second term of the Clinton administration, Coulter increasingly incorporated elimination rhetoric in her commentary. Those death wishes expanded with the publication of her fifth book, *Godless*, in 2006. Consider this gem expressing her desire to murder Michael Moore: “If the death penalty doesn’t deter murder, how come Michael Moore is still alive and I’m not on death row?”²³ Couched in humorous terms designed to soften the point and elicit laughter, Coulter nonetheless is saying that if there were no death penalty, if she could get away with it, she would murder Moore.



Coulter has expressed death wishes for a whole panorama of individuals, groups of people, entire organizations, and even nations (see Appendix 1: “Sampling of Coulter’s Death Wishes”).²⁴

But Coulter Still Has a Job

Consider this dialogue on *Kudlow & Cramer*:²⁵

KUDLOW: We got a couple of seconds before the break when you guys are all going to come back, but, Ann, I just want to give you first whack at this. Eason Jordan, top news executive at CNN – I mean, to me, this is absolutely incredible. This guy says at a big conference in Davos that the U.S. military is deliberately targeting and assassinating American journalists. Huh? He still has a job, huh? You got a take on that?

COULTER: Would that it were so!

KUDLOW: Would what were so?

COULTER: That the American military were targeting journalists.

²² Lydia Cornell, reported by Brad Friedman, “Exclusive: FBI Agent Who Interceded in Ann Coulter Voter Fraud Case Alleged To Be Her Former Boyfriend!” Brad Blog, 5/11/07.

²³ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, 2006, pp. 25-26.

²⁴ See also my documentary, “[Not Fit to Live](\"http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/not-fit-to-live.html\"),” Citizens for Principled Conservatism, 2006, [http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/not-fit-to-live.html](\"http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/not-fit-to-live.html\") and [http://www.bradblog.com/?p=2368](\"http://www.bradblog.com/?p=2368\").

²⁵ Ann Coulter and Larry Kudlow, *Kudlow & Cramer*, CNBC, 2/7/05.

KUDLOW: Oh, no! Don't go there. ... I'm going to give you the last word on a completely different subject, but I know you have knowledge on it. General Wayne Downing, a retired four-star, former head of special ops, told this show Friday that basically the time had come for surgical strikes in Syria. Do you have a quick, concluding thought on that?

COULTER: Yes, they should do that right after targeting the journalists.

Yes, Coulter *still* has a job.

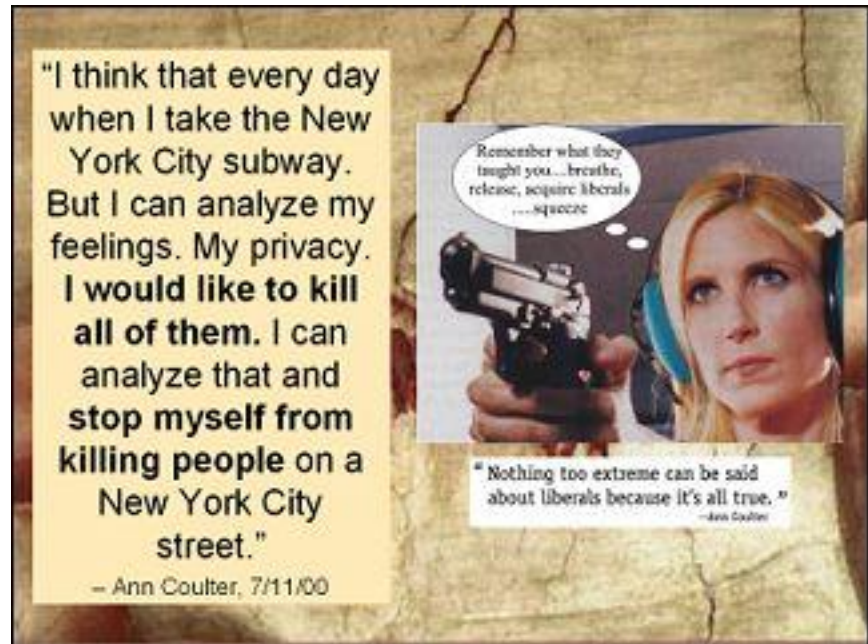
Multiple bestselling conservative author Michelle Malkin condemned Jordan for his *accusation* but ignored Coulter for her *desires*. Malkin listed Jordan as the number three unhinged media liberal because he “accused U.S. troops of murdering journalists in Iraq.”²⁶ Jordan *claimed* the U.S. military was targeting journalists for assassination; Coulter twice said that she *wants* them to.

Malkin also devoted an entire chapter to “Assassination Fascination” – condemning “assassination fantasies,”²⁷ “assassination chic,”²⁸ and “assassination insinuation.”²⁹ One subsection bemoaned “The Art of the Death Wish.”

Asserting the “psychopath absence of liberal decency is explained by the lack of both [religion and patriotism],”³⁰ Malkin also decried the use of the “‘just kidding’ card”³¹ – one often played by Coulter. Yet Malkin completely ignored the wealth of such material provided by Coulter. Instead, over the years, Malkin has been a vocal supporter of Coulter in the midst of her greatest controversies.

Early in 2008, Coulter's father passed away. Her touching tribute to her father concluded with these words: “Now Daddy is with Joe McCarthy and Ronald Reagan. I hope they stop laughing about the Reds long enough to talk to God about smiting some liberals for me.”³² Even in the midst of her personal grief, “smiting” liberals is at the forefront of her thoughts. Her views on the afterlife – and on what heaven is really all about – exhibit a spiritual immaturity which is shocking for one who condemns liberals for far less.

In a remarkable debate about health care legislation on *Hannity's* “Great American Panel,” Coulter was chomping at the bit to talk about her “death list.”³³ At the close of the panel's first segment, Coulter



²⁶ Michelle Malkin, *Unhinged: Exposing Liberals Gone Wild*, Regnery, 2005, pg. 112.

²⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 158.

²⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 161.

²⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. 162.

³⁰ *Ibid.*, pg. 165.

³¹ *Ibid.*, pg. 162.


³² Ann Coulter, “JOHN VINCENT COULTER,” 1/9/08.

³³ *Hannity*, FNC, 8/12/09.

announced that she had a death list. During the second segment, she said, “Totally ironically, Zeke Emanuel is on my death list. Hold the applause. I’m going to be on the death panel.” Hannity replied, “In other words, you get to pick who dies.” Coulter affirmed, “Right. I have a list. Should I start with the ‘A’s?’”³⁴

Is Coulter Really Anti-Abortion?

Even the anti-abortion aspects of Coulter’s pro-life credentials are suspect. In the 2000, 2008, and 2012 presidential election cycles, Coulter subordinated her anti-abortion beliefs to partisan pragmatism, lied about candidates and endorsed the candidate with the most money (and thus most electable in her eyes), regardless of that candidate’s actual track record and political platform.



Ann Coulter
Author, Columnist
Tier 3 - Personhood Later

Having endorsed for president the politician who had recently funded abortion on demand, including late-term child killing, unless she publicly recommits herself to the innocent, Ann Coulter cannot be trusted.

Coulter endorsed George W. Bush for president at a time when no one knew the details of his platform, and attacked Gary Bauer, whose pro-life position threatened the nomination of her guy, George W. Bush. One rather bizarre column suggested that Christian conservatism is fascistic and activism by Christian conservatives to end abortion is unconstitutional. This is particularly bizarre given that Coulter considers herself a Christian conservative. Somehow, Coulter found Gary Bauer’s mainstream conservative positions on abortion and homosexuality to be fascistic. In her column entitled, “Must Christian conservatives be fascists?,” Coulter wrote:

But back briefly to the real Constitution, the one composed of words and not “penumbras” – the Constitution nowhere grants the president, Congress or the Supreme Court authority either to ban or to require abortion. It grants no one in the federal government the right to ban or require gay marriage. It doesn’t say anything at all about abortion or gay marriage – or lots of other things, many of them big and important (like free champagne for blondes).³⁵

Many constitutional experts view the pro-life position as eminently constitutional and regard *Roe v. Wade* as unconstitutional, worthy of being overturned. Pro-lifers assert that defining embryonic life as human life would then allow for recognition of the constitutional (and human) rights of the yet-to-be-born. Don’t conservatives believe that *Roe* should be overturned as an infringement on the rights of the unborn? Would Coulter have upheld *Dred Scott*?

³⁴ Later in the year, Coulter’s website asked this rhetorical question: “Where Do I Apply to Get on a Death Panel?” – posted on 3/22/10 at 10:42 a.m.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, “Must Christian conservatives be fascists?” 10/16/00.

Nicholas Sanchez, Director of Development for Free Congress Foundation, took Coulter to task for her fraudulent column which specifically attacked Bauer.³⁶

In his article,³⁷ Bauer basically spells out to Bush how not to depress the conservative vote in what may be the closest election since 1968. This helpful hint was too much for Coulter who castigated Bauer, in an article posted on the *Jewish World Review* website, for wanting to promulgate federal laws that would ‘outlaw sex education, communism, atheism, condoms, Birkenstocks, *New York Times* editorials . . .’ etc., etc. Of course, Bauer suggested nothing of the kind.

In 2008, Coulter enthusiastically endorsed Gov. Mitt Romney for president, despite his pro-abortion and pro-gay rights record. Consequently, a coalition of pro-life organizations spearheaded by the American Right to Life has taken her to task, seeking a public apology for her lapse (see <http://www.anncoulterapology.com/>). They are still waiting. Coulter has again endorse Romney – in 2012!

During the 2012 presidential election, Coulter was first enamored with Gov. Chris Christie (R-NJ), then vociferously endorsed Romney, going so far as to attack all of his rivals, insist Romney is pro-life, and even defend Romneycare.³⁸

Political expediency is Coulter’s conscience. Christian apologist and pro-life activist Neil Mammen observes, “If you are willing to ignore the murder of innocents in your zeal to vote for someone, it can only be because you *don’t* really think that unborn children are really human or you truly *want* to kill babies. It’s like voting for an ‘anti-racist’ person who just happens to be a member of the Klan because he likes some other aspect of the clan.”³⁹

In 2010, Coulter again preferred partisanship to principle when she endorsed pro-abortion Republican Rob Simmons for the Senate in Connecticut.⁴⁰ During his career,⁴¹ Simmons consistently voted anti-life, even opposing bans on partial-birth abortion and human cloning. NARAL, the preeminent pro-abortion advocacy group, gave Simmons a 100% approval rating in 2003.



³⁶ Nicholas Sanchez, “Notable News Now,” Free Congress Foundation, 10/20/00.

³⁷ <http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a39dff0b61c87.htm>.

³⁸ See also “Chapter 11: The Beauty of Conservatism,” in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

³⁹ Neil Mammen, *Jesus Is Involved in Politics! Why Aren’t You? Why Isn’t Your Church?* American Family Association, 2007, 2009, 2010, 2011, pg. 276.

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, “Sarah Palin: Please Endorse Rob Simmons,” 6/9/10.

⁴¹ Josh Painter, “Crazy Ann Coulter wants Sarah Palin to endorse pro-abortion Rob Simmons,” Texas for Sarah Palin, 6/9/10. See <http://texas4palin.blogspot.com/2010/06/crazy-ann-coulter-wants-sarahpalin-to.html>.

Pro-Life Spokesman

Despite these many widely-reported controversies, Coulter has been sponsored as a prominently-featured speaker at many pro-life, pro-morality, and pro-family events. That's right, an advocate for death remains a spokesman for life. Please note the following non-comprehensive chart:⁴²

Date	Event	Sponsor
9/01/04	Celebrate Life	Republican National Coalition for Life
4/16/05	Silent No More Conference	Center for Moral Clarity
9/10/06	Via la Vita	Dayton Pro-Life
9/16/06	An Evening with Ann Coulter	Christian Coalition of Georgia
9/22/06	Values Voters Summit	Family Research Council
11/11/06	Foundation for Life Dinner	Texas Foundation for Life
3/03/07	Reclaiming America for Christ	Coral Ridge Ministries
4/20/07	Pro-Life Banquet	New Jersey Right to Life
10/7/10	Introducing Ann Coulter	Culture Campaign
10/12/10	Restoring America Conference	First Redeemer Church
11/15/10	Standing in the Gap for Life	Nixon Library / Whittier Pregnancy Care Clinic
3/3/12	Randall Terry Pro-Life Fundraiser	Democrat candidate Randall Terry

Most problematic are those Christian and pro-life organizations which give Coulter the star treatment. Despite Coulter's absurd thesis in *Godless* (2006) – that there are no liberal Christians,⁴³ effectively discounting half the Christian population in America – numerous Christian organizations have called on her expertise. Coulter was profiled on the Christian Broadcasting Network⁴⁴ and the Trinity Broadcasting Network,⁴⁵ appeared as an expert for Focus on the Family's "*Darwin's Deadly Legacy*"⁴⁶ DVD, and even appeared as an expert in "*Speechless: Silencing the Christians*,"⁴⁷ co-produced by the Inspiration Networks and the American Family Association.

One of the dangers of Coulterism is that it subverts both Christianity and Conservatism, it dehumanizes anyone who fails to embrace it, and it provides ideological and religious justification for nutcases to act upon the elimination rhetoric which she so easily and nonchalantly spews out.

More importantly, Coulterism brings anything but glory to the God who redeems and inhabits His people.

⁴² For additional information, please see these websites: Celebrate Life – <http://www.rnclife.org/party/celebrate-life2004.pdf>; Via la Vita – <http://www.ccn-usa.net/contents.php?typeid=3&id=357>; An Evening with Ann Coulter – http://www.gachristianalliance.org/action/action_2006-0504.htm and <http://www.humanevents.com/article.php?id=17076> and http://www.eevilconservative.com/archives/2006/09/an_evening_with_ann_coulter.html.

⁴³ Similarly, Coulter's monolithic views on liberals and the Democratic Party (called by Coulter the Abortion Party and the Treason Party) blinds her and her followers to the reality that godliness knows no political affiliation and that a respect for the sanctity of human life can be found anywhere. Author S.E. Cupp observes: "a 2009 Gallup poll reported that 33 percent of Democrats say they are pro-life. That's compared to 26 percent of Republicans who say they are pro-choice. That's right, there are more pro-life Democrats than pro-choice Republicans. 'Life' might be a more conservative position than 'choice' is, but it's certainly not *just* for Republicans." (S.E. Cupp, *Losing Our Religion: The Liberal Media's Attack on Christianity*, Threshold Editions, 2010, pg. 133.)

⁴⁴ See <http://mediamatters.org/items/200607240008>.

⁴⁵ See <http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-chat/1677835/posts>.

⁴⁶ See <http://www.coralridge.org/darwin/connection.asp?ID=crm&ec=I1301>.

⁴⁷ See <http://www.silencingchristians.com/>.

Chapter 12

Hypocrisy: Defaming Our Lord and Savior

“Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone.” –

Matthew 23:23

Hypocrisy – Matter of Behavior

In his first epistle, the apostle John addresses living a godly life, which involves fellowship with God based on obedience, love, and truth. Similarly, the fruit or evidence of our being children of God is obedience, love, and truth. As we have seen, hypocrisy is a function of obedience and heresy is a function of truth. Love is the catalyst for both a desire for truth and obedience to it. Hypocrisy is the antithesis of integrity and heresy is the enemy of truth. In contrast, love bridges integrity and truth.

Noted theologian Warren Wiersbe observes that the apostle John “wove three themes in and out of [the first few] chapters [of his first epistle]: obedience, love, and truth. In 1 John 1 and 2, the apostle emphasized fellowship, and he told us that the conditions for fellowship are obedience (1 John 1:5 – 2:6), love (1 John 2:7-17), and truth (1 John 2:18-29).”¹ The apostle John further denounced Christian hypocrisy by declaring that “sonship is revealed by obedience (1 John 3), love (1 John 4), and truth (1 John 5).”²

Authenticity should be a Christian hallmark.³ We are to walk the talk. Our actions should match our vocabulary. Noted theologian John MacArthur writes, “Biblical orthodoxy encompasses biblical orthopraxy. Both right doctrine and right living are absolutely essential and totally inseparable for the true child of God. That is the consistent teaching of Christ himself.”⁴

Sadly, the words of Sheldon VanAuken are all too true: “Christians are the best argument against, as well as the best argument for, Christianity.”

Theologian Charles Spurgeon admonished the brethren with these words: “So remember, you who profess to be followers of the Lord Jesus, that to you indifference is impossible! You must bless the church and the world by your holiness, or you will curse them both by your hypocrisy and inconsistency.” Evangelist Joyce Meyers puts it simply and directly, “Live the life we say we believe in.”⁵

Hypocrisy is always a blemish on God’s people, a character flaw which brings dishonor to God, His church, and His message for humanity. MacArthur adds, “Satan has no greater allies than hypocrites disguised as God’s people.”⁶

¹ Warren Wiersbe, *Be Real (1 John): Turning from Hypocrisy to Truth*, David C. Cook, 1972, 2009, pp. 30-31.

² *Ibid.*, pg. 31.

³ See Beth Moore, *When Godly People Do Ungodly Things: Finding Authentic Restoration in the Age of Seduction*, B&H Books, 2002; Warren Wiersbe, *Be Real (1 John): Turning from Hypocrisy to Truth*, David C. Cook, 1972, 2009; and John MacArthur, *The Jesus You Can’t Ignore: What You Must Learn From the Bold Confrontations of Christ*, Thomas Nelson, 2009.

⁴ John MacArthur, *The Truth War: Fighting for Certainty in an Age of Deception*, Thomas Nelson, 2007, pg. 37.

⁵ Joyce Meyers, *Enjoying Everyday Life*, INSP, 10/11/11.

⁶ John MacArthur, *Grace for Today: Daily Readings from the Life of Christ, Volume 2*, Moody, 2009, pg. 174.

Conservative (and Christian) Hypocrisy



Best-selling author and conservative talk show host Bill O'Reilly conducted a poll of his audience asking, "Do you approve of the personal attacks Ann Coulter uses in her new book?" Of over 60,000 votes cast, 72% approved, 28% disapproved. O'Reilly remarked on those results with this astute observation in his "Most Ridiculous Item of the Day" segment: "Now if you approve, then you can't attack the other side when those people use the personal attacks. That's the rule. So the next time some far left Kool-Aid drinker calls me a poltroon (that is a spiritless coward), you just have to sit there – mute."⁷ Ironically, for over half-a-decade, O'Reilly has been virtually "mute" over his frequent guest's extremism.

The following year, O'Reilly launched a crusade against those left-wing bloggers: "Finally, there are far-right Web sites that smear, no question. But I've studied this Internet situation now for more than a year. The viciousness of the far-left is unprecedented. It is un-American. It is immoral. Every politician should walk away from these people."⁸ What about Coulter's viciousness? When will O'Reilly walk away from Coulter, a frequent guest on his show?

Former congressman Joe Scarborough subtly and saliently stated the obvious: "I think [liberals are] wrong for only attacking the other side. And I think conservatives that don't hold their own people accountable are also incorrect."⁹

Christians who defend Coulter's worst excesses are equally hypocritical. Indeed, they should know better!

Coulter Defends Hypocrisy

With Rush Limbaugh's admission of prescription drug abuse in 2003, some conservatives unabashedly defended him. Rationalizations ran rampant on MSNBC's *Scarborough Country*,¹⁰ that discussion being emblematic of the debate within the larger conservative community. Coulter offered a whole series of justifications for Limbaugh's illegal drug use:

1. **Rush is the beloved father of talk radio.** "Look at what Rush Limbaugh has accomplished. We just take talk radio for granted now ... Rush Limbaugh pioneered something that was entirely new."
2. **Rush was experiencing back pain.** "[They are] acting like this guy was shooting up heroin or even smoking pot, smoking crack, drinking vodka for kicks. He had back pain the pain medication he was taking is incredibly addictive. The pain medication he was taking is incredibly addictive. They spent \$100 million a year fighting off addiction charges."
3. **No one is perfect like Jesus.** "Conservatives aren't claiming to be Jesus Christ. We do have flaws. Unless you are Jesus Christ and you have no flaws, then you can support punishing drug addicts while simultaneously having a flaw of being a drug addict."

⁷ Bill O'Reilly, *The O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 6/20/06.

⁸ Bill O'Reilly, *The O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 9/17/07.

⁹ Joe Scarborough, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 6/14/06.

¹⁰ *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 10/10/03.

4. **Rush should be praised for doing so well while on drugs.** "If this is what he's like on painkillers, imagine when he's off them. Like I say, it is amazing that he can be as entertaining, as funny as he is, and all of this while addicted to painkillers. Whoa! Set him loose once he's gone through detox." Coulter, notorious for her condemnation of liberal compassion and liberal support for rehabilitation programs, was indignant and apoplectic that anyone could see anything wrong with Rush's behavior. Strikingly, Coulter has a history of stentorian opposition to the legalization of marijuana and its use for medicinal (pain-killing) purposes.
5. **Rush is my friend.** Coulter's final, strongest defense of Limbaugh was "Look, if my mother committed murder, I wouldn't want her to go to jail. I don't want murder laws applied to my friends." By Coulter's logic and using her criteria no one would ever go to jail for anything! (A novel budget balancing concept.)

Hypocrisy – In Jesus' Eyes

The inescapable fact is that Jesus sternly rebuked hypocrisy. His harshest words were directed at hypocrites. In Matthew chapter 23, Jesus' colorful rhetoric elicits astonishment from his audience then and Christians today.



Jesus gives a clear warning to all those who claim to be His disciples: "Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?' And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!'" (Mt. 7:21-23).

Scripture is unquestionably clear: God upholds those who walk the talk; hypocrites bring dishonor to Him. We are called to walk as He walked (1 John 2:6). Those who reflexively and cavalierly dismiss charges of hypocrisy often do so seeking to *justify* their own wrong behavior.

Hypocrisy is a function of *behavior* and a reflection of *integrity* with its origins in the heart (Mt. 15:1-20). Christians are admonished to be *doing* His will (Mt. 7:41) and *practicing* righteousness (1 John 3:10). When we sin, we are to repent, not make excuses. We are to change our wrong behavior, not justify it. The only justification comes from Jesus Christ, who provides forgiveness based on His atoning sacrifice on the cross.

MacArthur warns, "Hypocrites are simply actors, persons playing a role, as the Greeks did on stage with their large masks. What such persons do and say is seldom sincere, but merely designed to create an image."¹¹

Best-selling author and Christian apologist Lee Strobel observes what should be obvious: "There needs to be a connection between our beliefs and our behavior, our character and our creed."¹² Noting that the behavior of some Christians repel non-believers, Strobel adds, "That is the power of inauthentic Christians to turn people away from God." C.S. Lewis put it this way: "When we Christians behave badly, or fail to behave well, we are making Christianity unbelievable to the outside world."¹³

Contemporary Christianity in America is at a crossroads, uncertain of its own identity and therefore adrift in the shifting political tides and bewildered by changing cultural mores. For those who have clarity of vision and foundational faith, it is essential to internalize one's beliefs in order to actually live those beliefs. Unpracticed ideals are vanquished dreams. Reality requires actualizing those ideals with patience, persistence, and purpose. But there's the fatal human flaw: "It is easier to fight for one's principles," observed Alfred Adler, "than to live up to them." But *it is imperative to do both*. Failure to do the latter will necessarily detract from the former.

Human nature wears a mask of hypocrisy. Hearts become hardened to the integrity of God. God calls us to remove our masks and to live transformed lives by His power and grace for His glory and honor. (Lord, remove our masks!)

Author and cultural observer MaryBeth Hicks wrote:

The call to greater civility is heard from the halls of Congress to the steps of the academy. Every media pundit and political player and talk radio jockey in every blue and red state in the nation knows that civility in American has been lost and must be found again. Yet we continue to practice and model for our children habits of incivility that teach more than our hollow words will ever communicate. In fact, manners and etiquette are considered old-fashioned and outdated, while our casual culture (think rubber flip flops in the White House Rose Garden – sorry, Northwestern University Women's Lacrosse team) has overtaken our social norms.¹⁴

Hicks then concludes, "But there are reasons for etiquette and rules for civil discourse. (Rule No. One: There are things you *just don't say*.) those rules offer a society structure. From etiquette comes civility, and from civility comes equanimity – the poise to remain composed in even the most fervent debate."

Coulter is certainly etiquette-ly challenged. Her off-the-cuff offensiveness purposefully provokes and deliberately divides.



¹¹ See May 10 ("Wrong Reason For Prayer"), John MacArthur, *Grace for Today: Daily Readings from the Life of Christ, Volume I*, Moody, 2008.

¹² Lee Strobel, "Reaching Your neighbors for Christ," *Focus on the Family*, WAVA, 10/29/10.

¹³ C.S. Lewis, *Mere Christianity*, HarperOne, 1952, 1980, pg. 208.

¹⁴ MaryBeth Hicks, *Don't Let the Kids Drink the Kool-Aid: Confronting the Left's Assault on our Families, Faith, and Freedom*, Regnery, 2011, pg. 189.

Just this year, Sean Hannity broadcast a series of shows condemning left-wing hate speech and called upon Coulter to be one of his experts on the subject.¹⁵ Unexpectedly, Coulter offered a mirror-image of his topic and called for attacking President Obama's *children*.

Hannity frequently attacks the Left for its "hate speech" and "hyperbole," even calling liberal depictions of conservatives throwing grandmothers over a cliff as "vile,"¹⁶ yet *defends* Coulter's hate speech and hyperbole. Coulter's rhetoric is often far more pejorative and hyperbolic than that which Hannity condemns.

Conservative author and culturalist MaryBeth Hicks provides sage advice for both sides of the political and cultural divide. Hicks notes that children (and adults) who are spared from the negative consequences of their bad behavior live stunted lives. Instead, accountability will lead to humility (and reduce hypocrisy). Hicks writes: "As well, parents too often protect children from the gift of failure and the lessons that only disappointment can provide. Humility, which they must learn by living accountably for their actions, will permit our children to have genuine respect for others. Out of humility comes respect, and out of respect comes gratitude."¹⁷

In contrast to hypocrisy, Hicks advocates character development (something Coulter promoted in the late 1990s). Returning to Hicks: "Yet we adults routinely protect our children from the consequences of their actions. If we teach our children the value of their good word, they will absorb the trait of integrity. From integrity comes honor, and from honor comes inspiration."¹⁸

Ann Coulter Suggests It's "Time" Conservatives "Go After The Obama Children"

POSTED BY ELLEN -22PC ON MARCH 22, 2012 · FLAG

During yet ANOTHER Hannity segment on liberal hypocrisy about personal attacks, Sean Hannity teamed up with Ann Coulter – an expert on personal attacks if ever there was one – to use the topic as little more than another excuse for a round of attacks on liberals. The thinking seemed to be: liberals are awful so we're cleared for being as awful as possible to them. But Coulter outdid herself by suggesting that it would be liberals' just desserts if conservatives "go after the Obama children."

The part about going after the Obama children was just one part of a load of Hannity-show hypocrisy. It started with attacks on Sandra Fluke – as if she hasn't been smeared enough by the right already.

"Here's something you and I agree on," Hannity said to Coulter. "Conservatives – they're not offended by all this stuff with Bill Maher." But Hannity went on to say that he *is* offended (and Fox News regularly refers to Maher as "Pig Maher" online). Then he accused liberals of "feigning outrage" at Rush Limbaugh. "I don't think people are as outraged as they act," Hannity said, as Coulter nodded her phony blonde tresses vigorously.

Well, it takes one to know one. Hannity's own phony-baloney Hantimony was hilariously exposed by Jon Stewart not long ago.

¹⁵ In particular, check on a special edition on "Left Wing Hate Speech," *Hannity*, FNC, 3/21/12. On his 5/11/12 radio show, Hannity lamented the mainstream media's refusal to use readily available video and audio of some of Barack Obama's most controversial statements, yet Hannity consistently ignores Coulter's worst statements – some of them made on his show! Just three days later, Hannity claimed that he was not "nitpicking" – "It's exposing the liberal media and a double standard that needs to be exposed!"

¹⁶ Sean Hannity, *Hannity*, Premiere Radio Networks, 5/7/12.

¹⁷ MaryBeth Hicks, *Don't Let the Kids Drink the Kool-Aid: Confronting the Left's Assault on our Families, Faith, and Freedom*, Regnery, 2011, pg. 187.

¹⁸ *Ibid.*, pg. 188.

Chapter 13

Heresy: Appearing as an Angel of Light

“having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!” – 2nd Timothy 3:5

As Angels of Light

The hypocrite professes sound doctrine but fails to behave accordingly. The heretic proclaims false doctrine without recognizing it as such. Theologian A.W. Tozer offers this definition: “A heretic is not a man who denies all the truth; he is just a very fastidious man who picks out what he likes while rejecting what he does not like. Certain aspects of theology appeal to him, but others are rejected because they do not suit him at the time. I refer to these as inconvenient aspects of theology.”¹ Tozer adds, “The very word ‘heretic’ means one who picks and chooses.”²

The apostle Jude warned of heretics who had already invaded the church in his day, writing that these “ungodly men” “crept in unnoticed” and turned “the grace of our God into lewdness and deny the only Lord God and our Lord Jesus Christ” (Jude 4). The apostle Paul warned Timothy to avoid “profane and idle babblings and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge – by professing it some have strayed concerning the faith” (1 Tim. 6:20-21).³

Paul added that the danger of these false apostles is that they can *appear* righteous. They transform “*themselves* into apostles of Christ” (2 Cor. 11:13, emphasis added). We should not marvel at this. “For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also transform themselves into ministers of righteousness, whose end will be according to their works” (2 Cor. 11:14-15).

Theologian John MacArthur warns, “Influential people who profess or pretend to believe the truth although they do not savingly believe it are probably the greatest internal danger the church faces.”⁴ Why? Because they set a wrong example, lead others within the church astray, and present a false face to those outside the church.⁵

In the mid-1990s, Coulter perceptively addressed one danger in this paradigm: “It is really appalling how people never recognize evil things in their own time if it’s presented in an attractive person or an attractive face. And I think that’s one of the dangers of Hollywood, and that is it is always portraying bad people from times past – slave owners and Nazis – as if they were so recognizably evil in their own time. But really, that is the dangerous thing about evil: people don’t have forms, there are charming people who are evil.”⁶ Charming people who are evil.⁷

¹ A.W. Tozer, *The Purpose of Man: Designed to Worship*, compiled and edited by James L. Snyder, Regal Books, 2009, pg. 66.

² Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

³ See Mary A. Kassian, *The Feminist Gospel: The Movement to Untie Feminism With the Church*, Crossway Books, 1992, and John MacArthur, *The Truth War: Fighting for Certainty in an Age of Deception*, Thomas Nelson, 2007. See also see www.thetruthproject.org and <http://www.truthmattersconference.org/>.

⁴ John MacArthur, *The Truth War: Fighting for Certainty in an Age of Deception*, Thomas Nelson, 2007, pg. 65.

⁵ For a dissertation on genuine godliness and true wisdom, in contradistinction to heresy, see my sermon in “Appendix 3: The Wisdom of Godliness,” in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

⁶ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 12/27/96.

Heresies Abound

Dan Brown's *The Da Vinci Code* set publishing records and revealed two remarkable aspects of our contemporary culture. First, the depth of the spiritual hunger and thirst of people from all walks of life cannot find satisfaction in the temporal. Second, in a nation founded by Christians and predicated upon Christian concepts, far too many people – even professing Christians – are unfamiliar with either the Bible, or Christian history, or both.



Heresies abound. Even in Jesus' time, the Pharisees elevated the commandments of men above the laws of God, and the Sadducees denied the spiritual realm and resurrection from the dead. Almost from Christianity's roots, false gospels have arisen. Catholic and Protestant strands of Christianity seek to adhere to the "faith once delivered."

A few of the more prevalent heresies are *Gnosticism* (salvation through secret knowledge apart from Jesus Christ), *Arianism* (Jesus Christ is the highest *created* being, not the Creator) and *Docetism* (Jesus Christ was divine, but only appeared to be human – just was an apparition on the cross and, thus, not a real sacrifice).

Today, the Christian community in America is about equally divided between those who focus on the law and those who focus on grace. Those theological demarcations have their political equivalents, creating a chasm between conservative and liberal Christians. The former are truth Christians, the latter, love Christians. In reality, both truth and love are necessary for a whole and complete gospel. They complement one another.

Coulter's Perverse Gospel

In her personal and professional conduct, Coulter has not just lapses of ungodliness but has established a *pattern* of misbehavior (hypocrisy). Worse, Coulter preaches false doctrines and a false gospel contrary to the very Word of God. The essentials of the Christian faith and Christian life include *repentance* (not justifying hypocrisy), *truth* (not deceit and defamation) and *love* (not inciting hatred). Coulter's counterfeit perverts the gospel of Christ (heresy).

While much has and will be written about the dangers in unwisely liberalizing (or modernizing or "watering down") biblical doctrines by the Religious Left, the Religious Right deserves criticism for its own excesses. As for Coulter's peculiar version of the gospel, well, to call it bizarre is an understatement.

⁷ For a dissertation on inward beauty and godliness, see my sermon in "Appendix 2: The Beauty of Godliness," in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

Perhaps the two most perverse aspects of Coulter's gospel are her expression of *enmity* for fellow human beings (including people of faith) and her defense of *hypocrisy* (at least when committed by conservatives). Indeed, Coulter's hatred extends to issuing frequent death threats against people, all in the name of advancing civilization and the gospel of life. Further, Coulter *politicizes* faith (as she does patriotism) by proclaiming its existence exclusively within the province of only one political party. Moreover, Coulter does this through demagoguery, deception and deceit, thus turning the gospel of Jesus Christ – a gospel of truth and love – into one of lies, hatred and hypocrisy.

Coulter has declared her hatred for feminists (“I hate the feminists. The real reason I loathe and detest feminists ...[they] are also marauding, bloodthirsty vipers”),⁸ the *media* (“It just reminded me of my hatred for the media”),⁹ the *government* (“I think I’m second to none in my hatred for the government”),¹⁰ *Bill Clinton* (“I’m part of the Clinton hate group”),¹¹ *John McCain* (“I used to love him, then I liked him, now I despise him”),¹² and, of course, *liberals* (“If you don’t hate Clinton and the people who labored to keep him in office, you don’t love your country.”),¹³ *liberals* (“Oh, how I hate them!”),¹⁴ and *liberals* (“I for one bolted past indifference straight into loathing long ago”).¹⁵

Coulter's enmity erupts into death threats against individuals and organizations, such as Elizabeth Dole (assault weapons), John Walker Lindh (execution, burned alive), Transportation Secretary Norman Mineta (assassination), the *New York Times* building (truck bomb), John Kerry (carpet-bombing), Vice President Al Gore (friendly fire), California Governor Gray Davis (friendly fire), Senator John Edwards (strangling), Senator John Kerry (carpet bombing), American journalists in Iraq (assassination), Supreme Court Justice Stevens (poisoning), all the liberal Supreme Court justices (terrorist attack). (See Appendix 1.)

While debating partial-birth abortion, Coulter declared her *daily desire* to “kill all of them” (her fellow New Yorkers): “I think that every day when I take the New York City subway. But I can analyze my feelings. My privacy. I would like to *kill all* of them. I can analyze that and stop myself from killing people on a New York City street.”¹⁶

But these views – hardly Christian or conservative – have been defended and lauded by Christians and conservatives.

A bizarre footnote on page three of *Godless* (2006) suggests Coulter's view of Christianity is just as bizarre as her view of the world as we know it.

Throughout this book, I often refer to Christians and Christianity because I am a Christian and I have a fairly good idea of what they believe, but the term is intended to include anyone who subscribes to the Bible of the God of Abraham, including Jews and others.

If Coulter thinks Jews, Muslims, and others who reject Jesus as Savior but who “subscribe to the Bible of Abraham” (which means the Old Testament) are “Christians” then she most assuredly does not have a “fairly good idea of what they believe.” Belief in Jesus Christ is the core essential of Christianity.

⁸ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pp. 324-325.

⁹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/21/96.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/19/97.

¹¹ *Ibid.*

¹² Ann Coulter, quoted in *Washington Post*, 8/1/00.

¹³ Ann Coulter, *George*, July 1999.

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, *National Review*, 11/7/00.

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, *Human Events*, 8/18/00.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 7/11/00.

Coulter's confusion as to what it means to be a Christian should come as no surprise given her repudiation of other core tenets of Christianity (such as truth and love).¹⁷

“Straight Christian Doctrine”

It is worth noting that Coulter refuses to forgive John McCain – conservatism's fiercest ally in the war on terror – because, six years earlier, he spoke against Rev. Falwell and Rev. Robertson for their brief post-9/11 hysteria.

Why did McCain criticize Falwell and Robertson? Because, while shocked and traumatized by 9/11, both of these Christian leaders blamed the terrorist attack on liberals. Falwell ascribed blame for 9/11 on pagans, abortionists, feminists, gays, lesbians, the ACLU, and the People For the American Way.¹⁸

Even though Falwell *immediately* repented and repudiated his remarks, Coulter to this day stands by them. In *Slander* (2002), Coulter wrote, “Falwell, it seems, had remarked that gay marriage and abortion on demand may not have warmed the heart of the Almighty.”¹⁹ On NBC's *Today Show*, Coulter declared Falwell's statement “straight Christian doctrine.”²⁰

But Falwell's words *weren't* “straight Christian doctrine” (her words, no pun by me). Falwell *did* directly blame 9/11 on *specific* (liberal) groups of people. (Just as Coulter still directly blames liberals, in general, and Bill Clinton, in particular, for that terrorist attack.) Moreover, are conservative Christians, big business, and republicans absolved of all guilt for America's moral and spiritual failings?

Nonetheless, in her eulogy for Falwell in 2007, Coulter used the voice of a leader of the Religious Right to promote her own views even though that leader quickly recanted those remarks. Her eulogy to Falwell included her rebuttal:²¹

Let me be the first to say: I ALWAYS agreed with the Rev. Falwell.

Actually, there was one small item I think Falwell got wrong regarding his statement after 9/11 that “the pagans, and the abortionists, and the feminists, and the gays and the lesbians – who are actively trying to make that an alternative lifestyle – the ACLU, People for the American Way, all of them who have tried to secularize America. I point the finger in their face and say, ‘You helped this happen.’”

First of all, I disagreed with that statement because Falwell neglected to specifically include Teddy Kennedy and “the Reverend” Barry Lynn.

Second, Falwell later stressed that he blamed the terrorists most of all, but I think that clarification was unnecessary. The necessary clarification was to note that God was at

¹⁷ Coulter provided an incredible befuddled explanation when queried about her footnote: **Question:** Isn't it odd to define "Christians" as including people who are Jewish? **Coulter:** Yes, that would be very odd, but I'm doing nothing of the sort. I'm not defining Christians as Jews or Jews as Christians or zebras as elephants. I'm informing the reader that when I use the term "Christian," I am using it to include anyone who believes in the God of Abraham because it got a little wordy to keep saying "Christians, Jews and anyone else who believes in the God of Abraham" throughout the book. I don't know how that could be any clearer. If everyone who believed in the God of Abraham were a Christian, I wouldn't have needed the footnote. **Source:** “Church Militant: Ann Coulter on God, Faith, and Liberals,” beliefnet.com, 2006, http://www.beliefnet.com/story/196/story_19646.html.

¹⁸ Jerry Falwell, *700 Club*, CBN, 9/13/01, http://www.geocities.com/stuart323_99/TheUSTaliban.htm.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 5.

²⁰ *Today Show*, NBC, 6/26/02.

²¹ Ann Coulter, “Jerry Falwell – Say Hello to Ronald Reagan,” *Human Events*, 5/16/07, <http://www.humanevents.com/article.php?id=20753>, accessed 8/16/08.

least protecting America enough not to allow the terrorists to strike when a Democrat was in the White House.

Reclaiming America for Christ Conference

In 2007, Coulter spoke at a Reclaiming America for Christ (RAC) conference in Ft. Lauderdale, Florida, where her words again incensed even the conference organizers. She repeated a gay slur she had given the previous day at CAPC *and* she condoned the murder of abortionists.

I spoke at CPAC yesterday, and I [took questions] about Obama and Hillary and Gore and global warming, and I said I was going to also have a few remarks about the other Democratic presidential candidate, John Edwards, but apparently you have to go to rehab if you use the word “faggot.” ...

Those few abortionists were shot, or, depending on your point of view, had a procedure with a rifle performed on them. I'm not justifying it, but I do understand how it happened. ... The number of deaths attributed to Roe v. Wade – about 40 million aborted babies and seven abortion clinic workers; 40 million to seven is also a pretty good measure of how the political debate is going.



RAC sponsors were not amused. Their conference summary omitted any mention of Coulter²² and their series of conference tapes excluded her entire session,²³ which was to be the capstone and climax of the conference²⁴ (see also a letter from Americans United for the Separation of Church and State).²⁵

Coulter & Christ – Righteous Clothing

Coulter often uses Jesus as a divine shield deflecting all criticism and charges of hypocritical conduct, as if just being a Christian (most importantly, a *conservative* Christian) absolves her of all guilt. With the publication of *Godless*, Coulter began to don Jesus' garment of righteousness as if it were her own, irrespective of just how unrighteous she herself behaved.

Coulter frequently uses Jesus' cleansing of the temple to justify her own behavior. In fact, Jesus confronted those who – like Coulter – profaned the temple of God.

Does anyone see the problem with her reasoning? Jesus is reviled for bringing Light into a world that loves the darkness, while Coulter is reviled for hiding the Light from those who seek truth and love. According to Jesus, the *defining attribute* of His people and His kingdom is *love*.

Does anyone confuse Coulter's hateful harangues with Jesus' gospel of grace and peace? Or Coulter with Christ? He sacrificed Himself for others; she sacrifices others for herself. He preached Love; she preaches hate. He spoke Truth; she tells lies.

²² Reclaiming America for Christ, <http://www.reclaimamerica.org/Pages/News/news.aspx?story=3185>.

²³ http://www.actsonline.biz/cr0107_59_ctg.htm.

²⁴ Reclaiming America for Christ conference schedule, <http://www.reclaimamerica.org/download/RACSchedule2007.pdf>.

²⁵ Americans United for the Separation of Church and State, 3/7/07, http://www.au.org/site/DocServer/Cass_3.7.07_pdf.pdf?docID=1442.

Strangely, Coulter's favorite Jesus story is when He throws the moneychangers out of the temple.²⁶ But this fits in well with her heroic-martyr complex. Coulter says, "He stated what the truth was. ... He wasn't a pantywaist."²⁷ At Xavier University in 2007, Coulter "was asked how she could justify her attacks as Christian? She answered that Jesus also used sarcasm and jokes to get his message across."²⁸ One year earlier, Coulter claimed,

And the other thing I'd say is yes, we have the whole love part of Christianity, but there's also the sword part. Jesus was not – I mean, ask the money-changers how nice Jesus was. There are many commands to go out and do battle against evil. And maybe I don't get it right. Maybe when I meet my Maker He'll say I was too harsh. Maybe He'll say I wasn't harsh enough. Who knows? I'll apologize for not getting it right and thank Him for dying for my sins.²⁹

Some regard Coulter as a fanatical Christian, an extremist human being. Evangelist and author Timothy Keller offers a salient observation on this point:

Think of people you consider fanatical. They're overbearing, self-righteous, opinionated, insensitive, and harsh. Why? It's not because they are too Christian but because they are not Christian enough. They are fanatically zealous and courageous, but they are not fanatically humble, sensitive, loving, empathetic, forgiving, or understanding – as Christ was. Because they think of Christianity as a self-improvement program they emulate the Jesus of the whips in the temple, but not the Jesus who said, "Let him who is without sin cast the first stone" (John 8:7). What strikes us as overly fanatical is actually a failure to be fully committed to Christ and his gospel.³⁰

It would appear that the pundit who seems "overly fanatical" is actually suffering from "a failure to be fully committed to Christ and his gospel."

What Would Jesus Do?

From the beginning, Coulter clothed herself in the righteousness of Jesus Christ to defend her own godlessness, as epitomized in this exchange on *Hannity & Colmes*:³¹

COLMES: You say your Christianity fuels everything you do

COULTER: Oh, yes. That's my *Human Events* interview.

COLMES: everything you write, and that you're called upon to battle cruelty. You said that to *Human Events*. Would Jesus sanction a book that belittles and ridicules a large segment of the American population?

²⁶ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/6/06.

²⁷ Margo Pierce, "Ann Coulter Is Right: After all, she acts just like Jesus," *City Beat*, 9/17/07.

²⁸ Joe Wessels, "XU an approving audience for Coulter," *Cincinnati Post*, 9/7/07, <http://news.cincypost.com/apps/pbcs.dll/article?AID=/20070907/NEWS01/709070366>.

²⁹ Ann Coulter, AOL interview, 7/14/06, <http://books.aol.com/feature/a/license-to-be-bold/20060717101109990001>, audio at http://aolradio.podcast.aol.com/books/aolbooks_anncoulter_071406.mp3. Coulter has made similar statements for a number of years. It is striking that she is willing to wait till she gets to heaven to apologize for her behavior – long after she is able to change her behavior. Why not get it right in this life? Why not engage in the introspection Scripture enjoins in this life? Why not seek God's will – and critically examine one's own behavior and motives – in the here and now?

³⁰ Timothy Keller, *The Reason for God: Belief in an Age of Skepticism*, Dutton Adult, 2008, pg. 57.

³¹ *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/6/06.

COULTER: Yes.

COLMES: Jesus would? Where would Jesus, can you point to the passage where Jesus would approve of that?

COULTER: Well, there's the famed money changers' passage, which is my favorite, probably a favorite of Sean's, as well. I mean, liberals always think of Christ as, you know, some pantywaist. No. We are called upon to do battle. ...

COLMES: What liberal said Christ is a pantywaist? Can you name who that is?

COULTER: No, this naming names things, you're not getting me into.

COLMES: Because you talk in broad categories. I'd like to know who specifically.

COULTER: I do talk in broad categories. This is a book about liberalism.

Did you notice Coulter's deflection? As with *Treason* in 2004, Coulter refused to identify a single individual guilty of her charges, resorting to the "they're all guilty" argument, despite lack of proof.

Belief vs. Behavior

What would Jesus do? Jesus admonishes us not to judge, or condemn, one another. Rather, we are to judge righteous judgment. This is in keeping with the commandment prohibiting false witness. In *Slander* (2002), Coulter blamed all liberals exclusively for America's polemical public square and for all of America's societal ills. In *Treason* (2003), she accused all liberals of a treasonous hatred for America and civilization itself. These themes were continued in *How to Talk to a Liberal If You Must* (2004) and *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans* (2007). In *Godless*, Coulter denied the existence of godly, or Christian, liberals. And in *Guilty* (2009), she specifically blamed exclusively single mothers for the dysfunctional dynamics extant in America today. In every instance, she impugns both the *motives* and the *character* of those she denounces.

Hypocrisy is the result of behavior which conflicts with espoused doctrines, regardless of the accuracy of those doctrines. In other words, hypocrisy is a function of *behavior* and an expression of *character* (or lack of it). Heresy involves a *belief*, or set of beliefs, which is contrary to the Word of God. Unlike hypocrisy, heresy does not necessarily call into question the character of the person's wrong beliefs. However, a heretic masquerading as an angel of light can inflict enormous damage to the body of Christ, both internally (its spiritual state) and externally (its image and its proclaimed gospel).

With that in mind, consider the next trio of chapters which summarize and examine key doctrines of the Religious Right and the Religious Left. Irrespective of the accuracy of any specific doctrine highlighted, adherents may possess genuine faith and exhibit godly character.

Chapter 14

Godless: Exhibiting the Works of the Flesh

“Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are ... of which I tell you beforehand, just as I also told you in time past, that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.” – Galatians 5:19-21

Godlessness

If *hypocrites* exhibit *behavior* which is contrary to their beliefs, and *heretics* subscribe to *beliefs* at variance with “the faith once delivered,” then who are the “godly?” From a physical standpoint, godliness is determined by right behavior, irrespective of biblical doctrines. Paul writes, “(for not the hearers of the law *are* just in the sight of God, but the doers of the law will be justified; for when Gentiles, who do not have the law, by nature do the things in the law, these, although not having the law, are a law to themselves, who show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and between themselves their thoughts accusing or else excusing them)” (Rom. 2:13-15).

Spiritually-speaking, godliness is a matter of the heart and pertains to a person whose behavior is in sync with his conscience, a conscience which is accurately calibrated to the will of God and direction of the Holy Spirit. However, Christians who have been called out of the world still battle human nature.¹ In Romans chapter 7, Paul addresses the internal spiritual warfare which is waged within every Christian: “For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do.” Paul concludes that chapter by praising Jesus as His deliverer.

It is one of the ironies of life that some people of faith can live godless lives while some nonbelievers can live morally upright lives. As author David Aikman reiterates, “individual atheists have been, and are, capable of exemplary behavior.”² But these not so subtle distinctions are lost on Coulter for whom other (ideological and expedient) considerations prevail. For some, it may seem sacrilegious to speak this truth: salvation does not instantly confer godliness.³

Christian author Timothy Keller, pastor of Redeemer Presbyterian Church in Manhattan, forthrightly observes the paradox of the Christian experience: “Christians, then, should expect to find nonbelievers who are much nicer, kinder, wiser, and better than they are. Why? Christian believers are not accepted by God because of their moral performance, wisdom, or virtue, but because of Christ’s work on their behalf.”⁴

Moreover, Pastor Keller does not summarily reject publicized accounts of the moral failings of Christian leaders, writing, “It may be true that the press takes too much pleasure in publicizing [the moral failings

¹ See Robert H. Knight, *The Age of Consent: The Rise of Relativism and the Corruption of Popular Culture*, Spence Publishing, 1998; Timothy Keller, *The Reason for God: Belief in an Age of Skepticism*, Dutton Adult, 2008; David Aikman, *The Delusion of Disbelief: Why the New Atheism Is a Threat to Your Life, Liberty, and Pursuit of Happiness*, Tyndale, 2008; George Barna, *The Seven Faith Tribes: Who They Are, What They Believe, and Why They Matter*, BarnaBooks, 2009, and See Damon Albert, *Pure Vessels: A Handbook for Reviving a Biblical Christianity in the Heart of Today’s Cultural Christian*, 2010.

² David Aikman, *The Delusion of Disbelief: Why the New Atheism Is a Threat to Your Life, Liberty, and Pursuit of Happiness*, Salt River, 2008, pg. 180.

³ See Win McCormack, *You Don’t Know Me: A Citizen’s Guide to Republican Family Values*, TinHouseBooks, 2008, for an albeit partisan examination of the immoral conduct of some “family values” Republicans.

⁴ Timothy Keller, *The Reason for God: Belief in an Age of Skepticism*, Dutton Adult, 2008, pg. 19.

of Christian leaders], but it doesn't create them."⁵ Keller adds, "At the same time there are many formally irreligious people who live morally exemplary lives. If Christianity is all it claims to be, shouldn't Christians on the whole be much better people than everyone else?"⁶ He further states a truth which Coulter denies in her writings: "Lots of people in the world are socially and personally ethical but do not have a relationship with God through Jesus Christ."⁷

Author and Christian apologist Neil Mammen agrees, noting, "As you can see most atheists can be "moral" based on the last two groups [of laws]. Their consciences and the laws of nature."⁸ He adds, "I know atheists who are *far* more moral than some hypocritical Christians are. I have atheist friends whom I'd trust with my life and property over Christians I have known."⁹

Coulterism

With the publication of *Godless* (2006), Coulter became a recognized *authority* on godliness, faith, and morality. Despite the obvious flaws inherent in her thesis – and several media maelstroms encircling Coulter – many religious organizations lent legitimacy to Coulter's bizarre claims.

Many of those claims are refuted below and elsewhere in this book. It is important to realize, as Christian pollster George Barna observes, that "Christians of all flavors comprise the vast majority of the U.S. population – more than four out of five people presently align with Christianity."¹⁰ Coulter does not recognize the majority of these people as being Christian based upon her theology and their ideology.



Moreover, Coulter has created her own heresy – Coulterism – which recognizes the centrality of the cross but denies the power of the resurrected life.¹¹ The first chapter of Coulter's fifth book, *Godless*, is titled, "On the Seventh Day, God Rested and Liberals Schemed." Its first paragraph reads:

Liberals love to boast that they are not "religious," which is what one would expect to hear from the state-sanctioned religion. Of course liberalism is a religion. It has its own cosmology, its own miracles, its own beliefs in the supernatural, its own churches, its own high priests, its own saints, its own total worldview, and its own explanation of the existence of the universe. In other words, liberalism contains all the attributes of what is generally known as "religion."

⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 53.

⁶ *Ibid.*

⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 233.

⁸ Neil Mammen, *Jesus Is Involved in Politics: The Only Way to a Happier, Healthier, Safer, and Mutually Prosperous America*, Rational Free Press, 2007, 2009, 2010, 2011, pg. 124.

⁹ *Ibid.*, pg. 135.

¹⁰ George Barna, *The Seven Faith Tribes: Who They Are, What They Believe, and Why They Matter*, BarnaBooks, 2009, pg. 187.

¹¹ See 2nd Timothy 3:5, Romans 12:2,21, and Romans 6:8.

In the remainder of the book, Coulter contends that all liberals subscribe to all of the extreme views she asserts that they homogenously believe. More discerning political observers recognize that liberals (just like conservatives) do not have a common ideological Bible. Her historical (and contemporary) revisionism is not limited to the Left. In *Treason* (2003), her revisionism visits the Left and Right indiscriminately. In every instance, her revisionism reshaped history and reality to the detriment of her foes and the benefit of her worldview.

In *Godless*, Coulter's use of newspeak necessarily descends to even greater depths. Drawing upon the historical stereotype of godless Communists, Coulter takes the next progressive step and concludes that liberals – in being de facto terrorists and traitors – must be godless.

In 1984, Orwell posited a world in which three superpowers were in perpetual warfare with one another. Coulter goes Orwell one better. Coulter's us-versus-them world posits a small group of Christian conservatives (whom she portrays as both the embattled victims and, yet, somehow, the victorious majority) against enemies both *foreign* (Socialists, terrorists, tyrants, most of Europe, most of the Third World) and *domestic* (liberals, feminists, environmentalists, Stalinists, atheists, globalists) – *all of whom are godless*.

Libertarians and Jesuits also make Coulter's list: "A lot of libertarians are godless. ... So many of your rank-and-file libertarians are cowards because they're godless and believing in God does not allow you to be a coward. ... It has been my experience that the Jesuit schools produce Linda Blair and the *Exorcist* in the audience. ... [Their female students are] demonic."¹²

Coulter's Own "Golden Rule"

However, Coulter herself has turned Christian theology on its head by claiming that "being nice to people is an incidental tenet of Christianity." Coulter denies the Christian imperative given by Jesus Christ Himself in the Sermon on the Mount – the Golden Rule. Surprisingly, Coulter cites both Ronald Reagan and Jesus Christ as role models, yet the former embraced the Golden Rule while the latter commanded it.

Coulter even transformed the evangelical "What Would Jesus Do?" into a sacrilegious question: "Who Would Jesus Kill?" Boasting of being a "mean Christian" doesn't seem to register on her conscience as the oxymoron that it is, an oxymoron which only makes sense through newspeak and doublethink. Coulter redefines Christianity in *political* terms and uses cognitive dissonance to *reshape* the gospel of Christ.

When did being nice become passé? Or being mean a virtue? Which is godly?

Indeed, WWJD is an introspective question designed to elicit the exercise of godly behavior. That question appears to be unasked in Coulter's own life, whereas, she has formulated her own question: WWJK? The former is life-affirming, the latter death-demanding.

What *did* Jesus do? He sacrificed Himself that we (all of humanity) might live. Jesus' message was a gospel of life.¹³ The seven "I Am" statements in the Gospel of John, which represent the personal testimony of Jesus Christ, all have *positive*, redemptive connotations: life-giving, soul-transforming, redemptive and restorative.

¹² Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

¹³ See Luke 9:56; 19:10 and John 3:17.

Sadly, Coulter has a one-dimensional vision of liberalism and of Christianity. Incapable of discerning an intersection of the two, she has developed a convoluted hodgepodge of viewpoints to support her theory of liberal godlessness. In the ultimate definition of demonization, Coulter places liberals on the side of demons. (Remember: Coulter herself purposefully chose June 6, 2006 – 666 – as her launch date to incite the Left.) Coulter disparages liberal motives and actually asserts, “Liberals just want to kill humans.” (But, wait, who wants liberals executed, assassinated, blown-up, poisoned, strangled, burned alive, killed by friendly fire and murdered with assault weapons? Oh, yeah, Ann Coulter.) (See Appendix 1.)

In The Beginning

The first chapter of *Godless* concludes with this theologically-grotesque paragraph:

Democrats revile religion but insist on faking a belief in God in front of the voters claiming to be “spiritual.” They can’t forthrightly admit they are Druids, so they “reframe” their constant, relentless opposition to every Biblical precept as respect for “science” or the “Constitution” – both of which they hate. Their rage against us is their rage against the Judeo-Christian tradition. I don’t particularly care if liberals believe in God. In fact, I would be crestfallen to discover any liberals in heaven. So fine, rage against God, but how about being honest about it? Liberals can believe what they want to believe, but let us not flinch from identifying liberalism as the opposition party to God.

From a theological standpoint, Coulter’s assertions are almost blasphemous. Coulter’s denial of the Religious Left is comparable to the Iranian president’s denial of the Holocaust. Coulter literally denies the hand of God in the lives of tens of millions of His people (who are the liberals she so despises).

Despite Coulter’s asserted Christian love for humanity, she “would be crestfallen to discover any liberals in heaven?” How gracious! But graciousness is the very essence of Christianity.

Tucker Carlson astutely queried Coulter regarding people of faith on the Left. She sidestepped his question, first exclaiming, “they’re lapsed liberals.”¹⁴ What Coulter has yet to grasp is that many liberals *are* liberals because they *are* people of faith. Their faith precedes their politics.

On June 7th (just one day after *Godless* was released), Bill O’Reilly aired a special feature on the latest Coulter controversy, The

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, *The Situation with Tucker Carlson*, MSNBC, 6/6/06.



otherwise savvy Christian conservative commentator, Sandy Rios, actually *commended* Coulter's courage. Republican strategist Karen Hanretty also lauded Coulter. Both Rios (implicitly) and Hanretty (explicitly) tried to *contextualize* Coulter's comments regarding the 9/11 widows (just as Coulter frequently does herself).

Consider, are "atheists" *necessarily* "godless" people? Are people of faith necessarily "godly" people? Both answers are obviously in the negative. Although atheists are by definition people who deny the existence of God, by every measure – scripturally, historically, anecdotally, logically – some atheists, by *nature*, live godly lives. Though they deny God, some live godly lives.

Similarly, some baptized, Bible-believing, God-fearing Christians live less than godly lives. Most notable are a few televangelists who have engaged in criminal or adulterous behavior and some priests who have engaged in wrongful sexual behavior. Although they constitute a small pool of Christians, they prove my point that groupthink is wrong on a variety of levels, not the least of which is that it is erroneous.

Promoting *Godless*

Consider Crown Forum's promotion of *Godless*:

Ann Coulter's most controversial (and entertaining) book ever: a withering assault on the established "Church of Liberalism" and its false prophet, Darwin.

In past #1 bestsellers, Ann Coulter has revealed how liberals lie about their conservative opponents (*Slander*). She's shown how the Left routinely stands with America's enemies against America herself (*Treason*). She's even defended liberalism's ultimate boogeyman: Joe McCarthy.

But now, Coulter ups the ante once again. In *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, she shows how liberal hostility to traditional religion stems from the fact that liberalism is itself a religion – a godless one. And, she reveals, thanks to the liberals who dominate our courts, our government bureaucracies, our schools, and our media, liberalism is now the established religion of our country.

Fearlessly confronting the high priests of the Church of Liberalism and ringing with Coulter's razor-sharp wit, *Godless* is the most important and riveting book yet from one of today's most lively and impassioned conservative voices.

The text highlights Coulter's "most controversial (and entertaining) book," "withering assault," "ups the ante once again," "Fearlessly confronting," "razor-sharp wit," "most important and riveting book yet from one of today's most lively and impassioned conservative voices." Despite the hype, Coulter is not a conservative, she's a controversialist.

The presumption – in the PR and in the book – is that liberalism, far from being just secular, has become a religion unto itself. And godless at that. As indicated above (and in Chapter 16), most liberals are actually people of faith. The politically-active Religious Left fuses their religious faith with their political activism, using (or, perhaps, misusing) Scripture in the process. Regardless, they are far from the godless atheists that Coulter would have us believe.¹⁵

¹⁵ Coulter purposefully ignores those conservatives who are atheists. See Frank Cress, *Damned If I Do ... Damned If I Don't: Reflections of a Conservative Atheist*, Fultus Corporation, 2005, and S.E. Cupp, *Losing Our Religion: The Liberal Media's Attack on Christianity*, Threshold Editions, 2010. Both authors are conservative atheists.

Even the irreligious, as pointed out elsewhere, are not necessarily “godless” from a *behavioral* standpoint. Conservative atheist S.E. Cupp observes: “As an atheist I like to think that Judeo-Christian values form the points of my moral compass. I assume for most other atheists it’s the same, though they may be loath to admit it.”¹⁶ Belief in a particular god does not guarantee godliness, nor does unbelief necessitate ungodliness.

The apostle Paul’s description of godliness is worth considering (Eph. 4:20-32). He instructs us to “put off the old man,” to “be renewed in the spirit of your mind” and “put on the new man.” His next words are a distinct repudiation of Coulterism: “Let no corrupt word proceed out of your mouth ... Let all bitterness, wrath, anger, clamor, and evil speaking be put away from you, with all malice. And be kind to one another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God in Christ forgave you.”¹⁷

The next two chapters analyze Coulter’s views of both the Religious Right and the Religious Left.

¹⁶ S.E. Cupp, *Losing Our Religion: The Liberal Media’s Attack on Christianity*, Threshold Editions, 2010, pg. 235.

¹⁷ In her eighth best-selling polemic, *Demonic* (2011), Coulter again engaged in historical revisionism, this time positioning Rev. Martin Luther King, Jr., on the side of the forces of darkness for contributing to a “mob mentality.” King’s message of love, forgiveness, and character development couldn’t contrast more with Coulter’s message of hatred, revenge, and character assassination. See “Ann Coulter Should Cast Out Her Own Demons Before Finding the Mote in MLKs Eye,” Alveda King’s Blog, 6/8/11, <http://www.priestsforlife.org/africanamerican/blog/index.php/ann-coulter-should-cast-out-her-own-demons-before-finding-the-mote-in-mlks-eye>.

Chapter 15

Religious Right: Warriors for Truth

“God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth.” –
John 4:24

Truth Christians

The Religious Right could be called “*truth* Christians” due to their fervor for the truth and to the One who proclaimed Himself “the way, the truth, and the life” (John 14:6). In Ephesians chapter 6, the apostle Paul described the armor of God with which we are to clothe ourselves. Christians are instructed to “take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God” (Eph. 6:17). That word of God is described as “living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the division of soul and spirit, and of joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart” (Heb. 4:12). After all, it is the Truth which sets us free.

The Religious Right takes God’s truth seriously, understanding Paul’s admonition to Timothy that “the church of the living God [is] the pillar and ground of the truth” (1 Tim. 3:15).¹ If the church will not proclaim the truth, who can?²

The spiritual battle described by Paul is played out in our culture, hence the term “culture war.” Coulter once observed that the mainstream media criticizes the “religious right” and “portrays us as an obscure cult of skinheads. ... But we are a very powerful force.”³

The Apocryphal “Religious Right”

Amazingly, just a few years earlier, Coulter denied the very *existence* of the “Religious Right” based on 1) conflicting *definitions* for “Religious Right” and 2) leadership *differences* within the “Religious Right.”⁴ More astonishing, leaders of the Religious Right accepted her absurd premise.

However, Coulter’s commentary struck a chord with her audience because she addressed a very real problem in America: a growing antipathy to Christianity within the culture and by the media. But rather than accurately convey this increasing cultural and elitist hostility to Christianity using quantifiable statistics or genuine examples of real discrimination against Christians, Coulter tarnished the truth by creating a demonstrably false dichotomy in which the real is imagined and the imagined becomes real.

¹ For an excellent exposition on worshiping in spirit and truth, see John MacArthur, *Worship: The Ultimate Priority*, Moody, 2012.

² For a detailed history of the Religious Right, see Daniel K. Williams, *God’s Own Party: The Making of the Religious Right*, Oxford University Press, 2010. See also Don Feder, *Who’s Afraid of the Religious Right?*, Regnery, 1996; William J. Federer, *Back Fired: A nation born for religious tolerance no longer tolerates religion*, Amerisearch, Inc. 2005; Peter A. Lillback, *Wall of Misconception: Does the Separation of Church and State Mean the Separation of God and Government?*, Providence Forum Press, 2007; Matthew Spalding, *We Still Hold These Truths: Rediscovering Our Principles, Redeeming Our Future*, ISI Books, 2009, www.WeStillHoldTheseTruths.org, Joseph J. Jacobs, *The Compassionate Conservative*, Institute for Contemporary Studies Press, 2000; and A.W. Tozer, *The Purpose of Man: Designed to Worship*, compiled and edited by James L. Snyder, Regal Books, 2009. See also Arthur C. Brooks, *Who Really Cares: The Surprising Truth about Compassionate Conservatism*, Basic Books, 2006.

³ Ann Coulter, Foreword for Rev. Donald Wildmon, *Speechless: Silencing the Christians*, Pathway Book Service, 2009, pg. xvi.

⁴ See chapter nine (“Shadowboxing the Apocryphal ‘Religious Right’”), Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002.

According to Coulter, the “Religious Right” is “nonexistent,” a “mythical enemy,” “bogeyman,” a “meaningless concept,” “the left’s imaginary enemy” and “ghosts of liberal imaginations” “invented” by the Left to strike “terror” in the hearts of Americans.



Noting conflicting definitions for “Religious Right,” Coulter concluded they must all be false, despite the reality that everyone has their own definition for any number of other terms, such as liberal and conservative, church and Christian.

She scoffs when liberals identify opposition to funding the National Endowment of the Arts (NEA) with the Religious Right, but then says that Christian conservatives are rightly horrified at what is produced by the NEA.

Coulter cites the media identification of four leaders of the Religious Right – “Pat Robertson, Jerry Falwell, Pat Buchanan, and Gary Bauer” – then denies they *are* leaders because of their political and doctrinal differences. “No meaningful classification scheme would every lump those men together,” contends Coulter. (One could say the same of the first- and second-tier GOP presidential candidates campaigning for the 2012 nomination – yet they are all Republicans.)

Coulter denies the existence of the “Religious Right” in part because it is not an “organization” with “membership cards.” However, the Religious Right *is* a *movement* and a loose *coalition* of religious and right-wing individuals, groups and organizations. In Coulter’s own words:

Despite the constant threat of the “religious right” in America, there is evidently no such thing as the “atheist left.” In a typical year, the *New York Times* refers to either “Christian conservatives” or the “religious right” almost two hundred times. But in a Lexis/Nexis search of the entire *New York Times* archives, the phrases “atheist liberals” or “the atheist left” do not appear once. Only deviations from the left-wing norm merit labels.⁵

Here, Coulter offers a false factoid. The Christian Coalition is filled with Christian conservatives, as are other organizations which *do* consider themselves part of the Religious Right. The Institute for First Amendment Studies observes that “The ‘Religious Right’ is a movement, not an organization.”⁶

Would Coulter deny the existence of Christian churches around the world because their members do not carry membership cards? Nonsensical!

⁵ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 166.

⁶ See <http://www.ifas.org/fw/9609/question.html>.

Coulter claims the “Religious Right” is a phantom, an apocryphal organization created and used by the Left to demonize Christian conservatives and she also contends that the “Atheist Left” actually exists as a viable organization.⁷

Coulter even claims she is unable to locate a single person who is a member of the Religious Right. I did a Google search on “Religious Right” and, within a few minutes, came across *Christianity Today*. *Christianity Today* has written dozens of articles *about* the Religious Right and has devoted whole issues *to* the Religious Right with articles written *by* people from the Religious Right.⁸

Perhaps *Christianity Today* is really composed of liberal atheists who are afraid to come out of the closet. Consider also the highly-regarded book by Jewish conservative Don Feder – *Who’s Afraid of the Religious Right* – whose author trumpets his membership within that community.

Indeed, in *Slander*, Coulter doesn’t even mention the names of Dr. James Dobson or Dr. D. James Kennedy – both renowned members of the Religious Right who have been treated favorably by the mainstream media. Further, the apolitical Rev. Billy Graham, arguably the most well-known Christian in America today, is deeply respected by the media. (Therein lies the rub – those Christians don’t fit Coulter’s thesis, thus they are expunged into an Orwellian memory hole.) None of these prominent Christian spokesmen, who have widespread respect among the media, fit into her conspiratorial scheme. Alarming, not a single member of the Religious Right spoke up to refute Coulter’s claim.

Far from being the figment of a fertile liberal imagination, the Religious Right was and remains a powerful political and cultural force in contemporary America. Coulter’s bizarre reading of recent American history offers no moral legitimacy and spiritual scope to her personal fatwa against liberalism.

Coulter relegated to the memory hole the deep cultural, political, and electoral impact of the Religious Right at the close of the 20th century. Until recent years, the political activism of the Religious Right kept the abortion industry and the homosexual lobby on the defensive. Still, the Religious Right continues to engage the culture and encourages grassroots activism on a whole range of moral and cultural issues.

Christian Victimology

Coulter’s argument seems to be that most Americans are conservative Christians under attack by atheist liberals who have invented an “apocryphal ‘Religious Right’” to demonize that moral majority in America who are really not engaged in the public square. Thus, Christians are both victims and vanquished – victim theology at its worst. Coulter even declares that the Left “insults the powerless” – meaning Christian conservatives.

Astonishingly, many Christians and conservatives have accepted some of Coulter’s most absurd conclusions as if they were holy writ. In particular, those evangelical Christians who proffer her moral support and propagate her outrageous claims should know better.

Even though Coulter claimed the non-existence of the Religious Right, she was interviewed by the son of Pat Robertson, a founding leader of the Religious Right. I can’t speak to Gordon Robertson’s motivation, but I am perplexed that a person of his caliber would unquestionably accept these demonstrably false arguments presented by Coulter.

⁷ See <http://www.dailyhowler.com/dh070902.shtml>.

⁸ See <http://www.christianitytoday.com/ct/9ta/9ta058.html>, <http://www.christianitytoday.com/ct/7t1/7t1054.html> and <http://www.christianitytoday.com/ct/2000/121/14.0.html>.

Robertson accepted as truth her claims on his show:

And I note how you never hear about the atheist left. It's only the Religious Right that seems to be this closely held corporation with dues-paying members. ... The only references I have to it is the entire mainstream press viciously denouncing the Religious Right and then a bunch of conservative Christians saying, "No, I'm not a member of the Religious Right." That isn't surprising since there's no such thing as the Religious Right, there aren't membership cards, it's not an incorporated entity, and there really isn't any block voting. So, like I say, that's part of what makes it this apocryphal entity.⁹

Who can deny the existence of the Religious Right as a political movement or the impact of the Christian Coalition and similar organizations on electoral politics? How can anyone accept Coulter's assertion that the Religious Right is a non-existent bogeyman created by liberal atheists? Is *Christianity Today* secretly the propaganda arm of the Atheist Left? Moreover, the *700 Club* was – and remains – part of the Religious Right.

Who believes – apart from Coulter – that millions of liberal atheists have secretly coalesced into a clandestine national, political movement known as the Atheist Left? Yet, many Christian conservatives blindly accept Coulter's contentions even though they should know better.

Why? Perhaps, in part, because it furthers the image of Christian victimhood. If so, this is a poor excuse for accepting lies in the guise of truth. Indeed, Christians are called to a "living hope" in Jesus Christ, who "gives us the victory" and through whom we can do all things. Victimology has no place in Christian theology.

Having said that, the existence of genuine persecution against Christians is the reality for a number of Christians and certainly there exists sometimes horrific hostility directed towards Christians here in America. But we cannot combat evil with evil. Truth and love are our weapons against lies and hatred. We can't just make things up, as Coulter does.



Has Christian conservatism become so bankrupt – or so fearful of current cultural and political trends – that it will *defend a lie* to gain public sympathy as an oppressed and victimized group? Jesus Christ – the founder of Christianity and the head of the church – *requires* allegiance to truth and fealty in faith. If the *leaders* of the church lack faith and affirm lies, where is our hope? (In Christ!)

Gospel and Godless Lobbies

In *Slander*, Coulter condemned liberal references to the "gospel lobby" yet enthusiastically wrote of the "treason lobby" (*all* liberals), prefiguring her sequel bestseller, *Treason* (2003), in which she continued her God-versus-liberals theme.

⁹ Ann Coulter, *700 Club*, CBN, 7/17/02.

Coulter's acknowledgements for that book were cleverly presented as a whole series of tiers of people and organizations who are/would be on a contemporary "blacklist" for liberals. Coulter's concluding acknowledgement asserts that God is on her side: "Also God, but He's already on the liberals' blacklist." In *Treason*,¹⁰ Coulter wrote:

Liberals chose Man. Conservatives chose God.

Why do they hate America? ... Whether they are rooting for the atheistic regimes of Stalin and Mao, satanic suicide bombers and terrorists, or the Central Park rapists, liberals always take the side of savages against civilization.

[The liberal cause is] anti-Americanism [based on] hatred of civilization.

... liberals once again are cheering for the destruction of civil society.

Betraying the manifest national defense objectives of the country is only part of the left's treasonous scheme. They aim was to destroy America from the inside with their relentless attacks on morality and the truth.

The fundamental difference between liberals and conservatives is: Conservatives believe man was created in God's image; liberals believe they *are* God.

Is the Religious Right fascistic or apocryphal? Are they non-existent or actively shaping political debate? If conservatives "chose God," aren't they "Christian conservatives" (AKA, the "Religious Right")?

Coulter concludes *Treason* with the assertion that "liberals believe they *are* God," but she devoted her fifth book, *Godless* (2006), to the axiom that they are godless. Which is it? Coulter gets that wrong as well, denying the existence of millions of liberals who are also people of deep religious conviction (see next chapter).

Moreover, in *equating* conservatism with Christianity, Coulter ignores a reality which is aptly expressed in conservative author S.E. Cupp's 2010 book, *Losing Our Religion*:

But here's, in part, why this doesn't add up: Some of the country's – and Fox's – leading conservative commentators aren't Christian. Mark Levin, Dennis Miller, Jonah Goldberg, Ben Stein, Bernard Goldberg, Bill Kristol, Michael Medved, Dennis Prager, Charles Krauthammer – all wildly popular, none Christian.¹¹

As I wrote in 2002, "Coulter's greatest fault, however, is not her provocative policy ideas or discriminatory remarks. ... Coulter's offense rather is that she portrays herself as a Christian conservative, a representative of the views and principles of the Religious Right, and then uses that adopted identity to spread hate and fear, thus stigmatizing all those who embrace Christian conservatism."¹²

Is Coulter a Truth Christian? Or does she slander those she disagrees with and hates? An avowed "polemicist," Coulter engages in character assassination, vilification, demonization, and the unrestrained use of the politics of personal destruction. Her targets of defamation include presidential candidates,

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, *Treason: Liberal Treachery From the Cold War to the War on Terror*, Crown Forum, 2003, pp. 9,285,286,289,292.

¹¹ S.E. Cupp, *Losing Our Religion: The Liberal Media's Attack on Christianity*, Threshold Editions, 2010, pg. 168.

¹² Daniel Borchers, "Columnist does conservatives a disservice," *Palladium-Item*, Richmond, IN, 9/14/02, pg. A6, <http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Columnist%20does%20conservatives%20a%20disservice.pdf>.

Supreme Court Justices, and American war heroes. As demonstrated above, she even defames the people of God, denying a major portion of the body of Christ.

Notice the merging of truth and love as you examine what the apostle John wrote about love:

He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes. (1 John 2:9-10)

He who does not love does not know God, for God is love. ... If someone says, 'I love God,' and hates his brother, he is a liar; for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen? (1 John 4:8,20-21)

Chapter 16

Religious Left: Ambassadors for Love

**“My little children, let us not love in word or in tongue, but in deed and in truth.” –
1st John 3:18**

Love Christians

The Religious Left could be called “love Christians” due to their zeal for love and the One who came in love to save the world (John 3:16-17). The Religious Left envisions being the hands and feet of Jesus Christ, helping those in need. They take to heart the words of the apostle James who wrote, “Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble ...” (Jas. 1:27). Being Good Samaritans themselves, they identify with the sheep in Jesus parable of the sheep and the goats (Mt. 25:31-46).

The Religious Left strives to walk as Jesus’ walked, tending to the poor, the oppressed, and the broken-hearted – compassion exhibited in action.¹

Atheist Left

Where Coulter’s views on the Religious Right have been confusing and contradictory, her views on the Religious Left have been constant: it does not exist. As early as 1998, Coulter asserted that there are no liberal Christians. According to her, the Religious Left does not exist! In *Slander* (2002), Coulter denied the existence of the Religious Right (see previous chapter), while simultaneously attacking the Atheist Left as its nemesis. (If the former does not exist, how can the latter be its nemesis?)

In attempting to prove liberal (anti-Christian) media bias, Coulter emulated the Media Research Center’s approach and counted the number of times certain words and phrases were used by news organizations. Coulter’s input criteria predetermined the results.

Using reporting by the *Washington Post* in 2000 as representative, Coulter compared the number of times “Christian conservative” or “religious right” was used (187) with the number of times “atheist liberal” or “atheist left” was used (0). Having condemned the *Washington Post* for liberal bias, Coulter ignored the conservative *Washington Times*, whose reporting pattern was similar (151 to 0). Neither paper used “atheist liberal” or “atheist left” because most liberals are not atheists and those who are do not comprise a viable political movement.

In *Godless* (2006), Coulter tried to seal the coffin on liberal Christianity by characterizing all liberals as godless. To do so, she cherry-picked quotes and events from a smorgasbord of political, religious, and environmental organizations and figures. Treating the most absurd statements of the most extreme individuals as normative and representative of the whole, Coulter completely ignored the mainstream nature of liberal Christianity. Rather, her polemics characterize liberal Christians as pagan, earth-worshipping witches whose goal is the destruction of civilization itself.

¹ See See Marvin Olasky, *The Tragedy of American Compassion*, Good News, 1992, Marvin Olasky: *Compassionate Conservatism: What it is, What it Does, and How it Can Transform America*, Free Press, 2000, and Richard Stearns, *The Hole in Our Gospel: What Does God Expect From Us? The Answer That Changed My Life and Might Just Change the World*, Thomas Nelson, 2009, www.theholeinourgospel.com. For a first-hand account of the perils of conflating compassion with government, see Starr Parker, *Uncle Sam’s Plantation: How Big Government Enslaves America’s Poor and What We Can Do About It*, Thomas Nelson, 2003.

The atheist left is Coulter's straw man. Most Americans are religious and there are *very few* atheists in America. Coulter herself gives the lie to her fabrication when she cites statistics which show Christians in America are relatively split, politically, left and right. A more apropos dichotomy is Religious Right versus Religious Left. Christian author David Aikman notes that according to a 2007 *Newsweek* poll, roughly 3% of Americans are atheists.²

Despite incontrovertible evidence to the contrary, Coulter claims that there are no true Christians on the Left. That explains this otherwise inexplicable sentence: "What is fairly stunning is that the left's carefully nurtured devil term [Religious Right] ... essentially comes down to accusing someone of being a Christian."³ There are, in Coulter's eyes, no liberal Christians. The contorted reasoning of Ann Coulter's mind is demonstrated here as Coulter at once *denies* the existence of a group she *herself* claims membership in and regards as *real* a group which *never* existed.



Godless is the pinnacle – or nadir – of her work and worldview, building upon her apocalyptic vision of a global war between good and evil being waged by the godless Left against the godly Right. The premises and precepts of *Godless* are just that – godless – actually denying the very God she purports to profess.

Many Christian conservatives unthinkingly embraced *Godless* for a plethora of reasons: affirmation of the Christian faith; proof of anti-Christian bias, politically, culturally and institutionally in America today; exaltation of conservatism and denunciation of liberalism; and refutation of Darwinism.

Overlooked by her admirers, Coulter's underlying foundational premises are not just flawed, they are heretical. As in her earlier tomes, Coulter employs the

traits of addictive thinking and Orwellian constructs to distort the truth. In *Godless*, Coulter redefines godliness in purely partisan terms.

In the fall of 2010, Coulter again asserted, "All liberals are atheists. Only the ones who have to stand for election even bother pretending to believe in God."⁴ To date, no Christian or conservative leader has yet to dispute her assertion.

Biblically-speaking, the body of Christ occupies two dimensions: temporal and eternal. Physically, in the temporal realm, the body of Christ is comprised of all Christians everywhere – irrespective of political persuasion or any other differentiating factor – who are alive today. Spiritually, in the eternal realm, the body of Christ is composed of all Christians throughout the ages, living or dead, who are alive in Christ, inhabiting eternity with Him. But those spiritual realities escape Coulter's notice.⁵

² David Aikman, *The Delusion of Disbelief: Why the New Atheism Is a Threat to Your Life, Liberty, and Pursuit of Happiness*, Salt River, 2008, pg. 4, referencing "The Latest Numbers," *Newsweek*, 3/13/07.

³ Ann Coulter, *Slander: Liberal Lies About the American Right*, Crown Forum, 2002, pg. 194.

⁴ Ann Coulter, "Obama is not a Muslim," 9/1/10.

⁵ During the book tour for her eighth book, the subtly-named *Demonic*, Coulter made a remarkable statement in a *Townhall* magazine (June 2011) interview: "Unlike liberals, conservatives never have to be afraid of new ideas, or where they might lead, because we believe in God and in the spark of divinity that exists in every human being." The second half of her statement is subline poetry, while the first half disavows fully half the body of Christ.

Crown Forum Books by Coulter

Coulter's first three books for Crown Forum posited an increasingly devolutionary worldview which has amazingly been lauded by conservative elites and grassroots activists.

The most enthralled are the activist youth who have a limited grasp of the historical, ideological, and spiritual contexts behind and surrounding Coulter's doctrinaire themes. Their youthful enthusiasm for Coulter's titillating and invigorating provocation, ginned up in a partisan climate devoid of reason, is understandable. More mature conservatives and Christians, who should know better, have no excuse.

In *Slander* (2002), Coulter literally blamed everything on the Left, asserting their allegiance with barbarism against civilization. In *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)* (2004), Coulter demonized the Left as intrinsically and inherently evil. In *Godless* (2006), Coulter again – against all logic and observation – absurdly declared the Left to be uniformly and ubiquitously evil – godless in every sense of the word. And in *Demonic* (2011), Coulter claimed the Left was just that – demonic.

Godless?

As with “liberal” and “Democrat,” Coulter uses “godless” as a pejorative. The dictionary defines godless as “worshiping or recognizing no god.”

Since *Godless* purports to speak for God, it behooves us to see what God's Word actually says on this subject. Just as Coulter declares all liberals to be traitors hell-bent on destroying civilization, so, too, Coulter implies that godless people are necessarily evil people. But what does the Bible say? The apostle Paul writes:

(For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: Which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;) – Rom. 2:13-15

Some people are, by nature or disposition, decent, law-abiding individuals who, without knowing God, are productive and proactive citizens, beneficial to their local communities and to society. Their consciences naturally conform to God's will. Thus, godliness is not necessarily dependent upon (nor is it ever a prerequisite for) one's salvation.

[For the purposes of this book, I use the biblical definition of “Christian” as one in whom Christ dwells (Rom. 8:9-17). This occurs when individuals are drawn to repentance and accept Jesus as their Savior. Spiritual maturity takes time to develop. Babes in Christ will inevitably hold some incorrect doctrines. Some (conservatives) may tend toward legalism; some (liberals) may tend toward license. A Christian who is “growing in the grace and knowledge of Jesus Christ” will adopt ever-more-accurate doctrinal positions. This chapter covers reasonable doctrines soundly derived from Scripture.]

The Religious Left

Since at least 1998, Coulter has vehemently denied the existence of the Religious Left. In *Slander*, Coulter even denied the existence of the Religious Right (with the *700 Club* strangely accepting her nonsensical premise) (see Chapter 15). Thus, per Coulter, anyone of any political persuasion is non-religious, yet most polls show that atheists are a minority in America.

Of course, if the Religious Right is an “apocryphal myth” as Coulter claims, then aren’t conservatives as godless as the liberals she condemns? But this is all nonsense and poppycock. Rational and religious people know better – or at least they should, unless their spiritual vision is blinded by partisan ideology.

Disregarding for the moment Coulter’s contradiction of a nation inhabited by godly conservatives who are not religious yet have faith in God and country, let’s focus on Coulter’s foundational theme: the American Left is godless. That assertion is demonstrably false. Moreover, it denies the hand of God in the affairs of righteous Christians who are of a liberal persuasion.

Essentially, the Religious Left consists of three groups: Christians, Jews, and those of other faiths. To Coulter, they are *all* godless because they are not *conservative*.⁶

A primary distinction between the Christian Right and the Christian Left is one of spiritual focus. As noted earlier, the Christian Right could be called “Truth Christians” because they emphasize truth, the law, righteousness, right behavior and a literal interpretation of Scripture. In contrast, the Christian Left could be called “Love Christians” because of their emphasis on love, forgiveness, mercy, compassion and service. They often interpret Scripture metaphorically. In reality, the Christian Right and Christian Left *complement* one another. Jesus came in grace *and* truth (John 1:17) while the apostle Paul exhorts us to speak the truth *in* love (Ephesians 4:15).

The Jewish Left, coming from the Old Covenant tradition of compassion in community, and of the government tending to the needs of the poor and the oppressed, often looks to government programs (the welfare state, the Great Society, Clinton’s New World Order) to aid the impoverished and needy. Thus, they emulate the Christian Left, who frequently transform the parable of the sheep and the goats (Mt. chapter 25) from a mandate for the church to one for the government. Left-wing, non-Judeo-Christian faiths often similarly pursue peace and the eradication of poverty.

The point is that Coulter ascribes godlessness to all of these people of genuine faith, not because they *are* in fact godless but because they are *liberals*.

Wikipedia, the Encyclopedia Britannica of the Internet, is instructive concerning some of the core distinctions between the Religious Right⁷ and the Religious Left.⁸



⁶ For a liberal Christian perspective, see Dean Merrill, *Sinners in the Hands of an Angry Church*, Zondervan, 1997; Dan Wakefield, *The Hijacking of Jesus: How the Religious Right Distorts Christianity and Promotes Prejudice and Hate*, Nation Books, 2006; and Tony Campolo, *Red-Letter Christians: A Citizen’s Guide to Faith and Politics*, Regal, 2008, <http://www.redletterchristians.org/>.

⁷ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Religious_right, accessed 5/5/06.

⁸ See http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Religious_left, accessed 5/5/06.

The term Religious Right is a broad label applied by both scholars and critics to a number of political and religious movements and groups that primarily are active around conservative and right wing social issues.

Sometimes the term Religious Right is used interchangeably with the term Christian Right, although some argue for a distinction. The Christian Right in the United States, for example, has made efforts to reach out to conservative Jews and Muslims, especially in building coalitions against abortion and gay marriage. Thus, at least in some small way, there is a broader Religious Right that exists as a tactical coalition.

The Christian Left is a term used to describe those who hold a strong Christian belief and share left-wing, liberal, or socialist ideals.

The most common Christian viewpoint which might be described as 'left wing' is social justice, or care for the poor. Supporters of this might encourage socialised medicine, generous welfare, subsidized education, foreign aid and government subsidized schemes for improving the conditions of the disadvantaged. With egalitarian values stemming from a Christian perspective, action on behalf of the oppressed is considered a duty.

Many such people assert that their left-wing views derive directly from their Christian faith, and some cite Jesus as "the first socialist". Many adherents hold also that the early Church practiced socialism, or even something resembling communism of a non-Marxist-Leninist variety, sometimes referred to as Christian communism ("The community of believers were of one heart and one mind. None of them ever claimed anything as his own; rather, everything was held in common." – Acts 4:32) and that Jesus often seemed to advocate pacifism, while being opposed to the wealthy elite of his day.

Remember this: *None* of these people – identified by Coulter as godless because of their particular political positions and spiritual viewpoints – is necessarily godless! Rather, like the Religious Right, they are imperfect (as are all human beings). Their faith in something other than Coulter is their failing in Coulter's eyes.

In all of Coulter's post-9/11 books, Coulter politically separates the sheep from the goats along rigidly partisan lines. In *Godless*, Coulter calls the very people of God – those who hold political views different from her own – godless, thereby denying the liberal half of the body of Christ and defaming Jesus Christ, the head of the church. This heresy has been overlooked by most religious leaders – a heresy which continues to this day.

“Pagan Left” Voters?

By any measure, Americans are a deeply religious people. Most polls – and exit polls during elections – indicate a roughly even split between people of faith who are liberal and those who are conservative.

In the 2000 presidential election,⁹ 42% of Protestant, 50% of Catholic and 79% of Jewish voters voted for Al Gore, the ultraliberal Democratic candidate. 36% of voters who attend religious services more than once a week voted for Gore, as did 40% of those with weekly attendance and 51% with monthly attendance. Moreover, fully 61% of Gore voters believed that Joseph Lieberman's religion made him a better candidate.

⁹ See <http://www.cnn.com/ELECTION/2000/epolls/US/P000.html>, accessed 5/5/06.

Similarly, in the 2004 presidential election,¹⁰ 40% of Protestants, 47% of Catholic and 74% of Jewish voters voted for John Kerry, the ultraliberal Democratic candidate. 35% of voters who attend religious services more than once a week voted for Kerry, as did 41% of those with weekly attendance and 49% with monthly attendance.¹¹

Is Coulter a Love Christian? Hardly. Coulter *glories* in her hatred of individuals, groups, organizations, institutions and over 48% of the American electorate. Further, her elimination rhetoric (death jokes) has become legendary, escalating in frequency and scope. Hardly Christ-like.

Consider Jesus warning to those who profess His name but are not Christians. Indeed, they – while performing “wonders” in His name – actually practice “lawlessness.”

Not everyone who says to Me, “Lord, Lord,” shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, “Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?” And then I will declare to them, “I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness.” (Mt. 7:21-23)

¹⁰ See <http://www.cnn.com/ELECTION/2004/pages/results/states/US/P/00/epolls.0.html>, accessed 5/5/06.

¹¹ This book excludes election data subsequent to 2004 since that data post-dates Coulter’s thesis in her books published in 2002-2006.

Chapter 17

Perfected: The End of Sanctification

“For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified.”
– *Hebrews 10:14*

“Be Ye Perfect”

Christians and non-Christians alike share unhealthy expectations of the church and its members, often becoming discouraged and critical when human imperfections emerge. Moral failings and hypocritical conduct tarnish Christians and the church universal. Some disciples and some fellowships can get caught up in legalism in their commitment to follow biblical teachings. Others go to the opposite extreme.

In the late 1990s, Coulter advocated for this legalistic, censorious spirit even as she bemoaned its transformation into political correctness. Coulter commended “moral fervor and censoriousness” in right things, saying, “I think it’s a strong human impulse to be self-righteous and censorious.”¹

Coulter then lamented, “now it’s gotten to the point where we can’t be self-righteous and censorious of the things that humans have been censorious for the past 5,000 years, like illegitimacy, like deserting your country in a time of war.” She added, “It’s because we are not censorious and self-righteous about promiscuous sex, not to say perverted sex, that all of the censoriousness comes bubbling up and it’s all directed to smokers.”

In His Sermon on the Mount, Jesus raised the bar of character and conduct to the Nth degree, declaring “Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect” (Mt. 5:48). That’s a tall order!

The apostle Paul emphasized that Christians “should be holy and without blame before Him in love” (Eph. 1:4). Paul exhorted us, writing, “I, therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you to walk worthy of the calling with which you were called” (Eph. 4:1). The apostle Peter added, “as He who called you is holy, you also be holy in all your conduct” (1 Pet. 1:15).

¹ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/20/97.



When people strive for perfection, they frequently become perfectionists. The focus centers on what they are *doing*, not on who they are *becoming*. The reality of our walk with Christ is centered on our relationship with the one who has given us a new heart, who is filling us up with Himself, who is strengthening us and helping us to grow and mature into the fullness of Christ (Eph. 4:11-24).

As a consequence of being born again into God's kingdom (John 3:1-21), Jesus imputes His righteousness, His holiness, His perfection, to us – even though we are, and remain, imperfect in this life.²

As Christians mature, we recognize how far we have come but we see ever more clearly how far we have yet to go.³ As the apostle John stresses, “If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us (1 John 1:8). In this life, we see through a glass darkly, but when we see Him face-to-face, all will be revealed.

Renowned Christian researcher George Barna observes, “At the risk of employing a worn concept, we have to ask what Jesus would do in any given situation and respond in kind. That is what it means to be a Christian – to be like Christ in every respect. It is an ideal beyond our human capacity, but it is an ideal that we can approach through the empowerment and guidance of our loving God.”⁴

Everyone Should be Christian

During her book tour for *If Democrats Had Any Brains, They'd Be Republicans* (2007), Coulter was embroiled in yet another controversy of her own making. Talking with Jewish talk show host Donnie Deutsch, who had treated her very favorably in previous interviews, Coulter made the astonishing claim, “That is what Christians consider themselves: perfected Jews.”⁵

A Fox News Channel lead paragraph remarkably declared, “Slash-and-burn columnist Ann Coulter shocked a cable TV talk-show audience Monday when she declared that Jews need to be ‘perfected’ by becoming Christians, and that America would be better off if everyone were Christian.”⁶ Yes, Fox News!

In that remarkable interview, Coulter out-Coultered herself.

Deutsch began the interview by asking Coulter what her perfect world would look like. She answered, “It would look like New York City during the Republican National Convention. In fact, that's what I think heaven is going to look like.” She later clarified her answer, saying, “take the Republican National Convention. People were happy. They're Christian. They're tolerant. They defend America.”

Deutsch interrupted, “Christian – so we should be Christian? It would be better if we were all Christian?” Coulter twice affirmed that everyone *should* be Christian, and then coyly asked the host, “Would you like to come to church with me, Donny?” Visibly offended by her views, Deutsch was blind to her attempt to defuse the situation with humor.

² See Neil T. Anderson, *The Bondage Breaker: Overcoming Negative Thoughts, Irrational Feelings, Habitual Sins*, Harvest House, 1990, and Neil T. Anderson & Robert L. Saucy, *The Common Made Holy: Being Conformed to the Image of God*, Harvest House, 1997.

³ Many contemporary Christian songs express a commitment to standing secure in Christ and living a life which reflects well on one's Savior and Redeemer. See Natalie Grant's *I Will Not Be Moved* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mdS0Yf6X8jg>) and Casting Crown's *Lifesong* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GnflxczuOrA&feature=related>) as representative of those themes.

⁴ George Barna, *The Seven Faith Tribes: Who They Are, What They Believe, and Why They Matter*, BarnaBooks, 2009, pg. 189.

⁵ Ann Coulter, *The Big Idea with Donnie Deutsch*, CNBC, 10/8/07. See video at <http://www.cnbc.com/id/21257844>.

⁶ “Columnist Ann Coulter Shocks Cable TV Show, Declaring ‘Jews Need to Be Perfected by Becoming Christians,’” FNC, 10/11/07, <http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,301216,00.html>.

Deutsch quickly queried Coulter, “So I should not be a Jew, I should be a Christian, and this would be a better place?” Coulter, assuming he is not a practicing Jew (perhaps because he is a liberal), asserted, “Well, you could be a practicing Jew, but you're not.” Deutsch countered, “I actually am. That's not true. I really am.”

After some heated debate, Deutsch again asked, “we should just throw Judaism away and we should all be Christians?” to which she replied in the affirmative. This is known as the Coulter Method of Evangelism.

In trying to extricate herself from a bad situation, Coulter only succeeded in making things worse. She opined that Christianity “is a lot easier” than Judaism: “It's kind of a fast track. You have to obey.” Querulous about what her perplexing words meant, he said, “You can't possibly believe that.” Coulter then tried to offer an explanation of Christianity, first asking, “Do you know what Christianity is?” then answering her own question, “We believe your religion, but you have to obey. We have the fast-track program.”

The host and his viewers were understandably perplexed. Christians believe Judaism? Jews “have to obey,” but Christians don't have to obey God? Christians have a “fast track program?” (Per Christian theology, Jesus Christ is the only track.)

Deutsch then shifted direction to address the Holocaust, understandably drawing parallels between Coulter's words about eliminating Jews with those of the Iranian president who wants to “wipe Israel off the earth.” Coming from Coulter – who had previously called for forced conversion of Muslims to Christianity and who had repeatedly spoken of a utopian world without liberals – her words naturally evoked images of the Holocaust to the ears of listeners who fear history repeating itself.

“Perfected Jews”

The tipping moment quickly arrived when Coulter claimed, “No, we think – we just want Jews to be perfected, as they say.” She added, “That is what Christianity is. We believe the Old Testament, but ours is more like Federal Express. You have to obey laws.”

Deutsch said Coulter's assertion was absurd, saying, “Jews are going to be perfected. I'm going to go off and try to perfect myself.” Coulter affirmed Deutsch's interpretation of her words as New Testament orthodoxy: “Well, that's what the New Testament says.”

This weird concept of “perfected Jews” is Coulter's own distinct formulation, not that of the Church. Moreover, no human being is “perfected” in this life. The New Testament most assuredly does not speak about “perfected Jews.” Nor can we perfect *ourselves*, as Coulter affirmed. It is the Holy Spirit who transforms Christians to become more like Jesus Christ – a process known as sanctification – which is a process of being perfected, but never attaining perfection in this life.

Deutsch stated that he was offended by her remarks and went to a commercial break, giving her time to regain composure and reflect upon how she could more accurately explain her theological views. After the break, Coulter *finally* talked about her Savior:

I don't think you should take it that way, but that is what Christians consider themselves: perfected Jews. We believe the Old Testament. As you know from the Old Testament, God was constantly getting fed up with humans for not being able to live up to all the laws. What Christians believe – this is just a statement of what the New Testament is – is that that's why Christ came and died for our sins. Christians believe the Old Testament. You don't believe our testament.

An un-mollified Deutsch returned to the crux of the matter, “You said – your exact words were, ‘Jews need to be perfected.’ Those are the words out of your mouth.” Coulter reiterated her inaccurate theology: “No, I’m saying that’s what a Christian is.” For the record, Christians are not “perfected Jews,” we are redeemed human beings.

After another lengthy give-and-take, Coulter offered yet another clarification, but this time “perfected Jews” became “perfected Christians.”



This is what Christians consider themselves, because our testament is the continuation of your testament. You know that. So we think Jews go to heaven. I mean, [Rev. Jerry] Falwell himself said that, but you have to follow laws. Ours is “Christ died for our sins.” We consider ourselves perfected Christians. For me to say that for you to become a Christian is to become a perfected Christian is not offensive at all.

In her legalism, she states that “the ‘law’ for Christians is ‘Christ died for our sins.’” Actually, that is not a law but a gift. Incredibly, Coulter confuses the two. Moreover, she consistently ignores the law of Christ, which is to love God and love human beings.

Moreover, Christians don’t consider themselves “perfected Christians.” We recognize that we are never perfected in this life. Rather, we are daily being transformed into the image of Jesus Christ, yet we struggle with human nature and the growing pains of becoming better, but never perfect, people.

Instant Damage Control

Taped on Friday, the episode wouldn’t air until the following Monday. Nevertheless, Coulter instantly engaged in preemptive damage control. Her approach to damage control was three-fold: attack her victim, claim to be the real victim, and defend her actual words. And she did so with alacrity, enlisting the aid of numerous talk show hosts and using her own column to go on the offensive. As Vince Lombardi was prone to say, “The best defense is a good offense.” Coulter vigorously follows his prescription, especially when her words or behavior are indefensible. Coulter might as well have condescendingly said, “What more can us good Christians do?”

Immediately following the taped interview – long before it even aired – Coulter began her campaign against Deutsch. Playing the victim for radio talk show host Kevin McCullough, Coulter claimed that she had been set up. McCullough fell for it. Indeed, McCullough accused Deutsch of being an “angry anti-Christian bigot.”

Notice McCullough’s description of events: “When my friend Ann Coulter came to see us in studio on Friday she mentioned the blind-siding that she had just experienced with Danny Deutsch of CNBC.”⁷ Blind-sided? Joseph Farah, who operates World Net Daily, repeated McCullough’s claim, calling it an “ambush interview.”⁸ McCullough continued:

... What happened during the taping aired this week. See for yourself as Deutsch begins to work her over until he feels like he’s drawn sufficient blood. Because of their past

⁷ Kevin McCullough, “Ann Coulter: I should have just said he’s an anti-Christian bigot!” Townhall, 10/12/07, <http://kevinmccullough.townhall.com/g/c0dbe939-60a0-4658-a687-85f92b7f904b>.

⁸ Joseph Farah, “Christians, Jews and tempers,” *World Net Daily*, 10/22/07.

relative friendly history – Ann bit her tongue and did not unleash the fury that Deutsch had coming. Long story short the transcript is now circulating online on blogs, and talk radio shows. MOST are condemning Ann in grotesque manners.

Work her over? Sufficient blood? Coulter *restrained* herself? Deutsch *deserved* fury unleashed?

... she holds up under the rapid fire of Deutsch's relentless tirade of gotcha. She even invites him to go to church with her in the near future. And along those lines I would say that she is purporting the Christian view. I would have not used the term "perfected" though in the most technical sense of the word it IS what she means.

Relentless tirade of gotcha? Purports the Christian view?

... Deutsch showed his true bigotry in the interview ...

Deutsch is the bigot?

Danny Deutsch in short is an angry anti-Christian bigot, looking to make a name for himself by biting into Christian icons. Pretty sad way to attempt to "scratch your way" into the "big time."

Again, *Deutsch* is the bigot?

In a *second* essay, McCullough continued his attack against Deutsch and defense of Coulter, writing, "Despite the rather precise, clear, and distinct explanations that Ann offered up, Deutsch continued to imply that Ann was anti-Semitic, religiously bigoted, and even educationally ignorant. The problem was – he was describing himself. ... What was demonstrated was that Ann has a knack for offending the ignorant."⁹

Personally, I consider McCullough a moral and principled person, devoted to God and committed to truth, who erroneously regards Coulter as sharing those same traits. With loyalty-colored blinders, McCullough called Deutsch an arrogant bigot.

Coulter reversed the guilt by playing the victim. Jon Caldera, Coulter friend and colleague, naturally took Coulter's side in an interview where "Jon and Ann discuss the most recent smear campaign ..."¹⁰ To Bill O'Reilly, Coulter said, "He's always been amiable to me. A dunce, but an amiable dunce. I didn't realize he was going to turn himself into the Al Sharpton of the Jews."¹¹ To Jewish talk show host Steve Malzberg, Coulter opined, "I don't think most Jews are as stupid as Donny Deutsch."¹² If Deutsch has always been an "amiable dunce," how did he become a viscous schemer capable of luring poor Ann into a sinister trap?

Desperate (for once) to turn attention away from herself, Coulter attempted to tarnish her eternal foe, Hillary Clinton. Look at the hostility pervading Coulter's Halloween essay:¹³

⁹ Kevin McCullough, "Ann Coulter's Theology: Offensively Accurate," 10/14/07, http://www.townhall.com/Columnists/KevinMcCullough/2007/10/14/ann_coulters_theology_offensively_accurate.

¹⁰ "Jon Caldera Interview Ann Coulter," Slapstick Politics, 10/19/07, <http://slapstickpolitics.blogspot.com/2007/10/jon-caldara-interviews-ann-coulter.html>.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, *O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 10/15/07.

¹² Ann Coulter, *Steve Malzberg Show*, WOR, 10/11/07.

¹³ Ann Coulter, "How Long Before The A.D.L. Kicks Out All Its Jews?," 10/31/07.

How about having Tim Russert ask Hillary if she believes the New Testament is the perfection of the Old Testament? She claims to be a Christian. Let's get it on the table: Is she or isn't she? It doesn't get any more bare-bones than that.

Let the cat out of the bag that a 2,000-year-old religion practiced by a majority of Americans teaches that Jesus came in “fulfillment of the scriptures,” and you might be better off if you had adopted the preferred approach of liberals' new friends the Muslims and simply slit the Jew's throat.

Having wrapped herself up in Christianity, Coulter asked prominent politicians to use her own warped formulation of the gospel in order to wash her hands of guilt and tarnish the reputations of people not even involved in her controversy. Notice, too, that in defending herself against charges of anti-Semitism, Coulter again attacked the totality of Muslims.

Replacement Theology

Some defenders claim Coulter is referring to “Replacement Theology.” If so, how could she be so obscure and obtuse in her manner of expressing herself, creating objectionable terms to complicate the simple? Simply put, God established a covenant with ancient Israel. Due to their repeated failure to live up to that conditional covenant, God removed Himself from their presence for several centuries. Jesus established a new, unconditional covenant, founded on His sacrifice for all humanity (Jews and Gentiles alike). The first covenant was with physical Israel; the second, with spiritual Israel (the spiritual descendants of Abraham, the father of the faithful). That is why the church is known as spiritual Israel.

But Coulter confuses the *covenants* with the *people*. The book of Hebrews speaks of a new and better covenant because of Jesus Christ's superiority over the law and His perfect sacrifice for all of mankind. Though the new *covenant* is better, that doesn't necessarily make the *people* of God morally superior to those who have not accepted Jesus as their Savior and King.

The Bible clearly teaches replacement theology – the new covenant replaces the old. The new covenant is superior to the old because it is based on Jesus Christ. The new covenant is a better covenant. That does not mean Christians are better than Jews.

Christians don't (or shouldn't) have an air of superiority towards others. Christians aren't *better* than other people; we're just *saved*. For the most part, Christians exhibit the humble attitude of “There, but for the grace of God, go I.” But Coulter takes an undeserved state of grace (God's salvation and sanctification) and turns it into a badge of honor to bludgeon her foes, adopting an air of moral superiority while defending her own hypocritical behavior.

Remember, according to Coulter, we're “perfected Christians.” In defending conservative hypocrisy, she boasts, “at least we have standards.” The apostle Paul, Coulter's authority on the subject, clearly stated that he himself had not “attained” or been “perfected,” but that he pressed on toward that *goal* that he had not yet “apprehended” (Phil 3:12-14).

Orwellian Groupthink

During this controversy, Coulter used a variety of Orwellian techniques. “Perfected Jews” and “perfected Christians” are *Newspeak terms created by Coulter which have absolutely no foundation in reality*. Orwellian groupthink predominates, with entire groups sharing specific traits, in this case, all Jews are flawed and all Christians have attained perfection.

It took a month for Coulter to cite a scholarly source to support her bogus theology – and that citation abysmally fails. Coulter wrote:

As the Oxford University Guide to the New Testament describes Paul's argument in the Book of Hebrews, "Christianity represented the perfection of Judaism. Christianity was the religion foretold by the prophets."¹⁴

Oxford correctly states the apostle Paul's core theology, but does not support Coulter's own theological assertions. The Old Covenant was superseded by the New. The former was founded on the law, the latter on Jesus Christ. Yes, the *institution* of "Christianity represented the perfection of Judaism." The institution, or dispensation, or paradigm was perfected – not the *people*.

Coulter's groupthink invades her theology just as it does her ideology. For her, all conservatives are better than all liberals, and all Christians are better than all non-Christians. Thus, "perfected Christians" are better than unperfected Jews.

In reality, the essence of the Christian experience escapes Coulter – and many Christians are fooled by her word games. Christians are not *better* than non-Christians; they are *forgiven* sinners. And Christians will never be "perfected" in this life.

Why does the apostle Paul spend so much time admonishing the brethren to put off the old man and put on the new, to walk in faith as children of light and truth? Because many Christians were failing to live up to their calling! Because some Christians were hypocrites, like Coulter, living lives more ungodly than non-Christians.

Paul, a scholar of the Old Testament and the principal author of the New Testament, well knew the human condition and the struggle every Christian faces against sin. Paul would be among the first to denounce the notion of "perfected Jews" and "perfected Christians."

But Coulter misquotes Paul to redeem herself, and she likens herself to Jesus to justify her own hypocrisy, while failing to emulate Jesus' love and Paul's humility. It was Paul who wrote, "For though I am free from all men, I have made myself a servant to all, that I might win the more; and to the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might win Jews; ... to the weak I became as weak, that I might win the weak. I have become all things to all men, that I might by all means save some" (1 Cor. 9:19-22).

Paul emulated Jesus, the perfect Servant. Paul followed the example of Jesus, who came to save the world, not condemn it. Where does Coulter's expertise lie? In salvation or condemnation? Can you imagine Coulter humbly becoming all things to all people in order to save some?

Instead, she created a phrase seemingly calculated to offend, then feigned victimhood for having given offense. Later, she impugned the motives of and belittled the intelligence of her host – all to absolve herself of blame. Such courage!

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, *Right Wing News*,
http://www.rightwingnews.com/mt331/2007/11/rwns_ann_coulter_interview_4.php.

Christians and Conservatives Beware

Coulter's interview with Deutsch is bizarre in a number of ways. Coulter treats as godless all those who, religiously, are not Christians, even though they may be adherents of other faiths, and she treats as godless all those who, politically, are not conservatives, even though they may be devout Christians.

Just as she conflates *race* and *religion* in advocating racial profiling for religious extremists, she conflates *religion* with *politics* – only *conservative* Christians are *really* Christians and only *they* are godly. Everyone else is godless. Far from expounding mainstream Christian views, Coulter's worldview – political and religious – is a product of her own psychologically-driven fears and compulsions.

C.S. Lewis, the great Christian apologist, provided deep insight into this very issue when he said that **Christians are the best argument for and against Christianity**. Mother Teresa would undoubtedly be on one side of the ledger. Where would Coulter fall? Is deliberate provocation for the sake of being provocative an argument for following Christ? Are expressions of enmity emblematic of Christianity?



Christians should never defend the wrong behavior of fellow Christians. Integrity demands truth. Righteousness requires repentance. As Barbara Simpson exquisitely expressed:¹⁵

Ann Coulter strikes again, and her machine-gun mouth put a lot of people in a bad light and herself in the spotlight of criticism.

No apology. No humility. And, no common sense.

As a writer, she knows *word choice* is critical.

For all her education and media experience, Ann Coulter shows herself to be a narrow-minded, holier-than-thou Christian of the worst sort.

Ironically, even legalists can succumb to believing they have already been perfected and no longer need to repent or grow spiritually. Indeed, their consciences can become so seared (1 Tim. 4:2) that they believe everything they do is good, justified, godly, perfect (see next chapter).

¹⁵ Barbara Simpson, "Pundit theologian lacks common sense," *World Net Daily*, 10/15/07, http://worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=58133.

Chapter 18

Victimhood: Christian Persecution Complex

“These things I have spoken to you, that in Me you may have peace. In the world you will have tribulation; but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.”

– John 16:33

Suffering For *His* Sake

Jesus called His brothers and sisters to an abundant life of inexpressible joy, paradoxically mixed with carrying our crosses (Luke 9:22-26) and suffering with Him (Rom. 8:17-18) and for Him (Phil.1:29).

The apostle Peter tells us that Christians are *blessed* when they suffer for *righteousness*' sake (1 Pet. 3:13). Peter emphasizes that it is better to suffer for doing good than for doing evil (1 Pet. 3:17). He plainly states that it “is commendable, if because of conscience toward God, one endures grief, suffering wrongfully ... when you do good and suffer, if you take it patiently, this is commendable before God” (1 Pet. 2:19-20). Indeed, we are called to partake in *Christ's* sufferings (1 Pet. 4:13) for His glory.

The apostle James echoes Peter, exhorting his brethren that we should count it all joy when we fall into various trials because it tests our faith and leads to spiritual growth (Jas. 1:2). In all things, we are to be thankful and praise God, knowing that “we are more than conquerors” through Jesus (Rom. 8:37) because He has “overcome the world” (John 16:33).

Nevertheless, while justifiably speaking out against very real persecution and hostility from the world, Christians can become too absorbed by the evils around them to the detriment of their own spiritual growth and relationship with the One who has overcome the world. The apostles considered themselves *victors*, not victims!¹ They were not overcome, but overcomers – even in persecution! And they never used persecution as an excuse for wrong behavior. Indeed, Paul wrote, “Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good” (Rom. 12:21).²

Speechless!

Jesus spoke with authority and clarity, warning His disciples, “If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you” (John 15:20). However, Jesus did not intend for us to develop a *victim* mentality. Rather, our attitude should be one of *victorious* humility, resting in the providential care of our Savior.

¹ Contemporary Christian music has not neglected suffering within its genre. Tree63's *Blessed Be Your Name* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3mZH9T9XNVU>) emulates Job's faith in and faithfulness to his Creator. Casting Crown's *Praise You in This Storm* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VHIQ6sBEO9A>) does just that, acknowledging the sovereignty and trustworthiness of God. SuperChick's *Beauty From Pain* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=M-GPbYcTDbQ>) observes that God somehow transforms our suffering into something beautiful (as promised in Romans 8:28) and reaffirmed by Amy Grant's *Better Than a Thousand Hallelujahs* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dOxebzBMAJs&hd=1>). Selah's *Press On* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IPUP8jenE9I>) encourages brethren to keep on keeping on while Plumb's *In My Arms* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IkIVOT6Uv2U>) rests in the safety and security of our Savior.

² See Janet and Craig Parshall, *Tough Faith: Trusting God in Troubled Times*, Harvest House, 1999; David Limbaugh, *Persecution: How Liberals are Waging War Against Christians*, Regnery, 2003; and Rev. Donald E. Wildmon, *Speechless: Silencing the Christians*, Pathway Book Service, 2009.

In speaking up for the Christian faith and speaking out against anti-Christian attacks designed to privatize our faith, Rev. Wildmon's book, *Speechless*, is marred only by its inclusion of Coulter as its spokesman and expert on the subject. In her foreword for *Speechless*, Coulter writes:

For as long as I can remember, liberals have been running around in a state of indignation, shouting that the government is being taken over by a dangerous band of religious fanatics who want to abolish the First Amendment, establish a national religion, force their bizarre sexual morality on children in public schools, rewrite the nation's laws to enforce their personal moral preferences, and punish anyone who dissents from their views. Unfortunately it's all true. That's precisely what liberals are trying to do.³

Whatever accuracy exists in her stereotypical summary of liberalism is diminished by Coulter being the messenger conveying those views. As we have already seen, Coulter ascribes persecution to herself when, in fact, she relentlessly persecutes others, even employing elimination rhetoric and mongering hatred. Indeed, Coulter proves to be a strange spokesman for Christian persecution.

Ann Coulter ≠ Jesus Christ

Coulter frequently likens herself to Jesus Christ and heroic martyrs of past and present. Everyone knows her moral and political views, from being anti-abortion and anti-gay marriage, and pro-abstinence and



pro-traditional values, to favoring a strong military with limited government and low taxes. However, Coulter's controversies inevitably arise not from her stated Christian/conservative commentary or biblical views but are due entirely to her own carefully-constructed manner of conveying them, with an avowed intent to incite rage.

Virtually every "firestorm of controversy" circling around Coulter has been contrived by Coulter herself, or is the direct consequence of her own *unchristian* behavior and rhetoric. Rarely are these controversies sparked by conservative principles or Christian doctrines. Rather, the catalyst is almost invariably Coulter's own deliberate provocation (she calls herself a polemicist and provocateur with good reason). And, with good reason, reasonable people are outraged at her use of hate speech, character assassination, elimination rhetoric, lies, and slurs

(racial, ethnic, gay, misogynist). These *behaviors* – which are antithetical to Jesus' teachings – are rightly condemned.

Spawn of Satan Convention

Coulter, who was heralded as a conservative "bomb-thrower" even before becoming a conservative celebrity, proved her stridency in her coverage of the 2004 Democratic National Convention. Yes, Coulter did refer to that convention as "the Spawn of Satan convention."

Here at the Spawn of Satan convention in Boston, conservatives are deploying a series of covert signals to identify one another, much like gay men do. My allies are the ones wearing crosses or American flags. The people sporting shirts emblazoned with the "F-

³ Ann Coulter, Foreword for Rev. Donald E. Wildmon, *Speechless: Silencing the Christians*, Pathway Book Service, 2009, pg. vii.

word” are my opponents. Also, as always, the pretty girls and cops are on my side, most of them barely able to conceal their eye-rolling.⁴

USA Today terminated its short-term contract with Coulter because she refused to allow her first essay to be edited. Coulter then declared that she had been both banned from and censored by *USA Today*. And conservatives bought into her nonsense.

The otherwise sensible Joe Scarborough reiterated her claims on his television show, introducing Coulter with these words: “And conservative consultant Ann Coulter was banned from the *USA Today*’s convention coverage in Boston. Was it media bias or good editorial judgment?”⁵ Scarborough then said to Coulter, “When I read this on Drudge, I was shocked. What excuse did *USA Today* give you for actually, if not censoring, at least killing your editorials?”

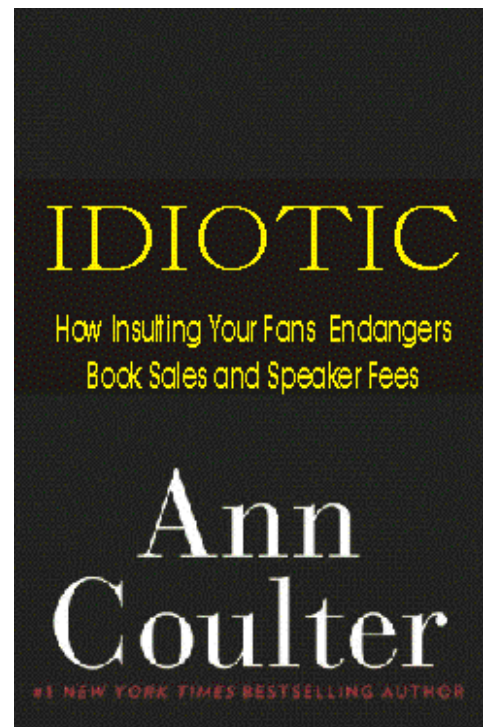
Coulter was neither banned nor censored by *USA Today*. Indeed, she was not even hired to write “editorials.” She was hired to write commentary, not polemicism. According to *USA Today* spokesmen, Coulter “did not make requested edits” and then, without warning, published her own attack against the editors. The spokesman said that it is a “good question” whether Coulter made a good faith effort at writing for the newspaper or deliberately seized the opportunity to create a controversy and generate publicity.⁶

The Paranoia Factor

One factor for Coulter’s decade-long success is the Paranoia Factor. Talkmeister Bill O’Reilly used the “perfected Jews” controversy over Coulter’s words – without even stating, analyzing or justifying those words – as further proof of his contention that there is an anti-Christian bias in the media and in our culture⁷ (see Chapter 17).

Coulter’s controversy fit his storyline of systematic and systemic persecution of Christians. Similarly, Jewish defenders of Christianity, such as Dennis Prager and Michael Medved, are so used to contrived controversies against Christians that they failed to analyze the merits of any charges directed against their friend, Coulter. Ignoring the evidence, they actually cite her as an example of a persecuted Christian.

Other conservatives do this as well, viewing any criticism of Coulter as an attack on Conservatism or on whatever Cause they hold dear.



Pro-lifers disregard fallout generated from Coulter’s elimination rhetoric because of her implacable anti-abortion views. Second Amendment proponents ignore Coulter’s predilection for suggesting that other nations be nuked because they approve of her anti-gun control advocacy. Pro-family organization ignore her sex symbol status because she defends the traditional family and upholds morality (in word, though

⁴ Ann Coulter, “Put the Speakers in a Cage,” 7/26/04. See also “Chapter 7: Spawn of Satan Convention,” in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

⁵ Joe Scarborough, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 8/5/04, <http://www.msnbc.msn.com/id/5621622/>.

⁶ Author interview.

⁷ *The O’Reilly Factor*, FNC, 8/15/07.

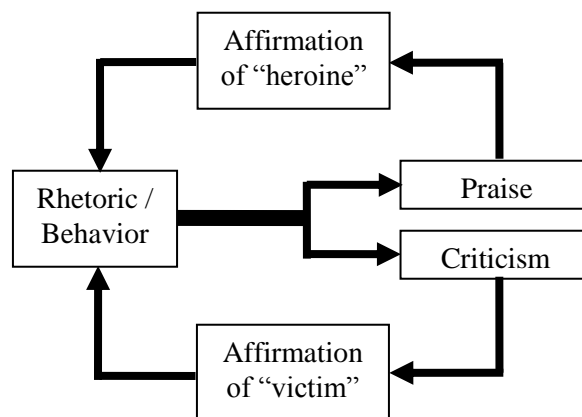
not necessarily, in deed). They turn blind eyes and maintain muted voices for fear of losing an advocate for their particular Cause.

Criticism as a Badge of Honor

Coulter even views constructive criticism as a badge of honor and proof that she is always right (one of the hallmarks of addictive thinking). Denial demands that all criticism be false. As the *Daily Telegraph* observed: “This is a woman who likes being loved but loves to be hated. ‘Most of the time, I just think of Chairman Mao’s saying that it’s a good thing to be attacked by the enemy. The more vicious they are, the happier I am.’”⁸

In a 2002 interview with *World* magazine, Coulter said, “I tell the truth, relentlessly. In addition, I thrive on their attacks, which seems to annoy them.”⁹ With the publication of *How to Talk to a Liberal* (2004), Coulter crystallized her self-identity as a conservative martyr. The promotion for *How to Talk to a Liberal* (and the book itself) portrays Coulter as a heroic victim, even victimized by those conservative publications which “censor” her. By a psychological quirk, everything Coulter does and everything said about Coulter is proof of Coulter’s self-image as a heroic victim.¹⁰

No matter how ludicrous her remarks, how deplorable her words or how immoral her deeds, some fans will praise her, reward her, affirm her. That praise is affirmation of her heroism. Those who criticize Coulter – regardless of the merit of the criticism – also affirm Coulter, this time as “victim” of liberal hatred. Both praise and reproach reinforce rationalizations and deepen denial. Addictive thinking becomes a closed system hermetically sealed from truth. The accompanying flowchart presents this dynamic.



Thus, both praise and criticism have the same psychological effect – reaffirmation of her self-identity and reinforcement of her behavior.

Consequently, there is no need for repentance, no need to change. In fact, this dynamic creates a tendency to continue, if not *amplify*, the reinforced behavior. To paraphrase Newton, a behavior in motion tends to remain in motion. This could be called Coulter’s doctrine of heroic infallibility.

Custard Conquers Coulter

In 2011, Coulter spoke with confidence and conviction, correlating courage with her Christian beliefs: “When you realize what God has done for you there is nothing this world can do to you. You have absolutely no fear and there’s no point in having principles, there’s no point in being right if you don’t have the courage to say it because you’re afraid of what other people are going to say.”¹¹ Whether these claims are truly exhibited in Coulter’s life remain to be seen.¹²

⁸ Ann Coulter, *Daily Telegraph*, 7/19/02.

⁹ Ann Coulter interview, *World* magazine, 10/5/02. http://www.worldmag.com/world/issue/10-05-02/cultural_4.asp.

¹⁰ These dynamics are explained in greater detail in “Chapter 6: I Am Victim, Hear Me Whine,” in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

¹² For analysis and examples of Coulter’s courage, see “Chapter 5: ... and Balls,” in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

Indeed, in October 2004, two students threw custard pies at Coulter and their successful attack further warped her psyche. Ever since she has lied about that singular event with ever greater embellishments upon each telling.¹³

In that very same interview in which she boasts of her courageous Christianity, she again lies in every single detail about the pie-attack upon her. Coulter claimed:

They missed because they throw like girls – liberals. And they got their faces smashed, by the way, because we did have an audience out there and I said, “Get them!” and the audience got them and one of the men ended with a broken collarbone. ... It was the College Republican girls who decked the guys.¹⁴

In reality,

1. They did not miss, as attested to by video of her wiping her elbow, the police report, and police photographs of her pie-stained dress.
2. The assailants were not physically injured. But note the false details – the smashed faces, a broken collarbone – never happened.
3. Coulter did not say “Get them!” though she did run for her life.
4. To further belittle her attackers, Coulter invents the scenario of the “girls” decking the guys.”

As noted in my first book, Coulter totally transforms one of her only actual experiences as victim into something which has little resemblance to reality. Indeed, in her fabricated version of events, the only intersection between truth and her tale is that two students threw pies at her. Everything else is a lie. The accuracy of their throws, the success of their efforts, the consequences to the attackers – all are minutely detailed by Coulter and all are lies.

It is undeniable – Coulter lies. Even about personal experiences concerning herself. She either *believes* everything she says (which she claims to be the case) and has therefore *deluded* herself, or she *knows* she is *lying* and therefore has no affinity for truth. In other words, she either has *mental* or *moral* problems. She is either *deluded* or *deceptive* – one or the other. Could it be that her continue attacks on the Left as being “either evil or stupid – or both” are merely projection?¹⁵

(This example is also illustrative of how deceptive and manipulative Coulter can be. She so convincingly makes her false claims that anyone unfamiliar with what actually transpired is prone to believe her. Even Hannity, who watched the videotape of the pie attack, agreed with her that the pies had missed her – even though she very noticeably wiped custard from her elbow!)

Coulter Not Persecuted

Christians and non-Christians alike can suffer for evil and/or unwise words or actions. In those cases, they rightly reap consequences for what they have sown (1 Pet. 2:20). Many Christians are confused and

¹³ For a detailed analysis of this event which Coulter consistently lies about, see “Chapter 6: I Am Victim, Hear Me Whine” in my free PDF book, [*The Beauty of Conservatism*](#), which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

¹⁵ As I pointed out in *The Beauty of Conservatism*, neither beauty nor intelligence are the measure of godliness. Indeed, Lucifer (who became Satan) was a model of intellectual perfection and beauty, yet he became deluded, falling in love with himself, so much so that he thought he could replace God. We know from human history that many brilliant people have followed his example.

accept Coulter's false claims of being persecuted for being a Christian. Rather, it is her un-Christ-like speech and behavior which engenders criticism (1 Pet. 2:20;3:17;4:15). The apostle Peter clearly addressed this aspect of our Christian walk in his first epistle. And, rather than develop a victim mentality, he admonished the brethren to "rejoice" in *godly* suffering (1 Pet. 1:6-9;2:12;3:14,16;4:12-14,16).

By identifying herself with persecuted Christians, Coulter adroitly deflects justified criticism of herself using her professed Christianity as a shield, dishonoring Jesus and those she purports to represent (1 Pet. 2:16).



Let us be clear: Ann Coulter is not persecuted for her faith. She reaps controversy from sowing discord.¹⁶ *Christians who defend her misbehavior share in her sins* even as she and they damage the image and integrity of the Church. Indeed, they dishonor our Father in heaven. Moreover, in seeking to exonerate Coulter, they reward her wrong behavior, enabling her to be the worst she can be. Instead of allowing the natural consequences of her sinful behavior to lead to repentance, they thwart spiritual growth in her life.

"We can sometimes invite persecution by being unduly abrasive and difficult, so that others do not persecute us as much for our faith as for the tacky way we express it," observes John MacArthur. "How can we tell the difference? Are people being offended by Christ or just by us? There is certainly no blessing in being obnoxious."¹⁷

A final word of caution to all Christians: **we, as Christians, are *never* to adopt a victim mentality.** Ours is a calling of joy in the midst of suffering because the entire New Testament attests to the fact that we are *victors*, not victims. "We are more than conquerors" through Christ (Rom. 8:37) and "we can do all things" through Him (Phil. 4:13). Remember that nothing is impossible with God (Luke 1:37) and nothing can separate us from His Love (Rom. 8:31-39). Consequently, as we experience trials and tribulations – and fearlessly stand up for the truth in love – we should rest in Jesus (Mt. 11:28-30). Doing so, we will

¹⁶ In contrast to *righteous* rebukes against Coulter's demonstrably *unchristian* words and actions, consider *real* persecution of Christians for their *faith*. See Richard Wurmbrand, *Tortured for Christ*, The Voice of the Martyrs, Inc., 1967, 1998. See also Open Doors (<http://www.opendoorsusa.org/>) which serves persecuted Christians worldwide.

¹⁷ John MacArthur, *Grace for Today: Daily Readings From the Life of Christ, Volume 1*, Moody, 2008, entry for March 20.

dwell in His inexpressible joy (1 Pet. 1:8), abide in His inexplicable peace (Phil. 4:7), and exhibit His irrepressible love (1 Cor. 13:8). Consequently, we will overcome evil with good (Rom. 12:21).

Author George Barna similarly cautions that “Our job is not to do everything possible to avoid persecution and hardships for our faith.”¹⁸ Indeed, the New Testament chronicles how God’s people endured false accusations and persecution willingly, joyfully.

Barna adds, “Jesus promises us such trials and exhorts us to accept difficult times, even unjust actions, as a way of imitating His behavior and showing our devotion to the ways of the Kingdom of God.” Jesus, the only just human being who ever lived, endured it all “for the joy that was set before Him.” Often, it is how we exhibit God’s grace, love, and forgiveness in the midst of trials and persecution that draws other people to the One who has showered His grace upon us.

The apostle Paul so skillfully expressed our dilemma as Christians, writing, “We are hard-pressed on every side, yet not crushed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; persecuted, but not forsaken; struck down, but not destroyed – always carrying about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life of Jesus also may be manifested in our body. For we who live are always delivered to death for Jesus’ sake, that the life of Jesus also may be manifested in our mortal flesh” (2 Cor. 4:8-11). But Paul preceded this Christian reality with a kingdom vision: “But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellence of the power may be of God and not of us” (v. 7).

That treasure, Jesus Christ living within us, is the awesome Presence which makes this life worthwhile and the next life so greatly to be desired and apprehended.

¹⁸ George Barna, *The Seven Faith Tribes: Who They Are, What They Believe, and Why They Matter*, BarnaBooks, 2009, pg. 189.

Chapter 19

Confessions of Faith

“And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death.” – Revelation 12:11

A Living Sacrifice

Christians are called to be living sacrifices to God (Rom.12:1), transformed by God (Rom. 12:2), to become more like Him. Jesus, the Lord of all creation, became one of us (Phil. 2:5-8) so that we might become like Him (Eph. 4:13, 1 John 3:1-3). Jesus entered this world full of grace and truth (John 1:17), but as mere mortal flesh, Christians have trouble embracing both components of Jesus’ reality.

God is both *love* (1 John 4:8) and *truth* (John 14:6, 1 John 5:6). As noted earlier, in general, the Religious Right focuses on truth while the Religious Left focuses on love. Both halves form the whole of Christianity. Sadly, truth Christians and love Christians often vie with one another over who is more Christian. This is similar to the denominational divide between Catholics and Protestants and the minor and major doctrinal differences among the panorama of Christian denominations.¹

Often looking to ourselves and to our own devices, we forget that every single Christian experiences the indwelling of the Holy Spirit and that this incredible treasure is contained in earthen vessels (2 Cor. 4:7).

Each Christian is “God’s workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do” (Eph. 2:10). Yet, too many Christians are quick to judge their brothers and sisters in Christ, ignoring the reality that we are all called into the same body of Christ (Eph. 4:4), are all given spiritual gifts from Jesus Christ (Eph. 4:7), and that none of us is perfect.

Christians should have a “confession to the gospel of Christ” (2 Cor. 9:13), and “hold fast our confession” (Heb. 4:14), which is exhibited in practical Christianity. As Richard Stearns, CEO of World Vision, explains, “Our charge is to both proclaim and embody the gospel so that others can see, hear, and feel God’s love in tangible ways.”²

Generally speaking, some Christians on the right can be *negligent* in their expressions of love in action, while some Christians on the left can be *indulgent* in their proclamation of truth. Conservative Christians, tending to focus more on the *head* – knowledge, truth – and liberal Christians, tending to focus more on the *hands* – actively helping those in need – can both neglect the reality that God is interested in the *heart* (Mt. 5:8, Ps. 51:6,10).

Our Father in heaven desires that we embrace and become like Jesus, that we grow to have His very heart. Jesus self-description is self-revelatory. As He reaches out to the whole of humanity, calling us to come unto Him and receive His rest, Jesus exposes His own heart: “for I am meek and lowly in heart” (Mt. 11:29). Are *we*?

Are *we* meek and lowly in heart?

¹ See Thomas D. Williams, LC, ThD, *Knowing Right from Wrong: A Christian Guide to Conscience*, Faith Words, 2008, and Pete Briscoe with Todd Hillard, *Belief Matters: Grappling with the Essentials of the Christian Faith*, Harvest House, 2009, <http://www.beliefmatters.com/>.

² Richard Stearns, *The Hole in Our Gospel: What Does God Expect From Us? The Answer That Changed My Life and Might Just Change the World*, Thomas Nelson, 2009, pg. 18.

Belief → Behavior

Every single human being has a set of beliefs and we each, to one degree or another, act in accordance with those beliefs. From a Christian perspective, theological beliefs which align with truth are orthodox, while those which depart from truth may be heretical. Theologically, there are beliefs concerning gray areas (referred to as “questionable things”) which are neither orthodox or heterodox. In short, heresy is a matter of a false belief system.

Our behavior can, and should, spring from our beliefs. Accurate beliefs should lead to wise behavior. A person with orthodox beliefs who does not behave in accordance with those beliefs – who fails to walk the talk – is a hypocrite. Where *heresy* is a function of *belief*, *hypocrisy* is a function of *behavior*.

God calls each one of us to be children of light, to walk by faith, be doers of the word, be faithful to the truth. Both heresy (false *beliefs*) and hypocrisy (wrong *behavior*) threaten the image and integrity of the church and jeopardize the effectiveness of the gospel which we are to proclaim, live, and teach.

Coulter’s own espoused and exhibited faith is an odd mixture of orthodoxy, heresy, and hypocrisy. To the extent that Christians, regardless of political persuasion, tolerate, defend, or affirm false beliefs and wrong behavior, they are complicit in her sins of omission and of commission – they are effectively unindicted coconspirators of a false gospel.

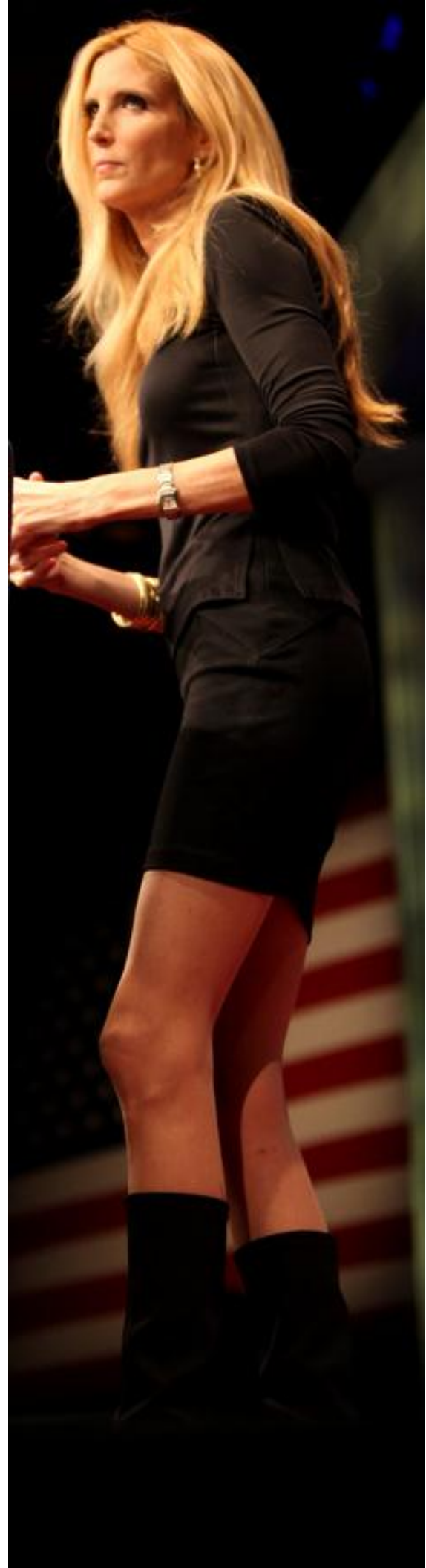
Belief matters. Behavior matters. The Lord of heaven and earth will judge the quick and the dead, their words *and* their deeds. We should strive to seek the truth and to live by every word of the truth. Heresy and hypocrisy should be anathema to every Christian.

No one individual, institution, congregation, or denomination has a flawless, perfectly-formed belief system and we all remain imperfect human beings who *should* be growing in the grace and knowledge of Jesus Christ. The Religious Left and Religious Right both have strengths and weaknesses. Each has something positive to contribute to the body of Christ and the work of God. We should seek a unity of the faith on essential, core doctrines and extend grace toward one another regarding those “questionable things.”

What we believe and how we behave matters.

Good Housekeeping

Good Housekeeping rejected perhaps the best essay ever written by Ann Coulter. In tone and style, substance and insight, Coulter cogently and concretely exposed the enticements of evil and exhorted readers to move upward and onward. Coulter’s essay – an excellent exposition on



good and evil – exemplifies why so many conservatives tolerate so much extremism from Coulter. Her proverb – “If You Sup with the Devil, Use a Long Spoon”³ – modernizes grandma’s more familiar “A man is known by the company he keeps.” In her essay, we rediscover that the devil disguises sin as harmless fun, that television and Hollywood gussy sin up to appear attractive, and that sin seeks its own, or, as Coulter writes, “Vices of a feather flock together.” One’s friends deeply influence one’s choices in life.

She lays out her case in a non-polemical fashion, boldly describes the dangers and modus operandi of evil, and discusses moral issues within the paradigm of contemporary American culture and politics. Evil, no matter how attractively packaged, is still evil. And evil thrives when good men do nothing.

Coulter observed, “Evil does not advertise with a flashing sign [it’s evil nature] ... Evil presents itself like a beautiful banquet.”⁴ Her most incisive observation illustrates a core life issue: “People don’t commit acts of great evil or great courage out of thin air. Character is developed out of a lifetime of choices. Almost every decision you make, however small, will be a step closer to God or a step closer to the devil.”⁵

Coulter’s very astute observation is followed by her optimistic exhortation: “But it’s never too late to stop and begin taking steps toward God. It’s a lot easier to make that journey with companions who know the way.”

The character of political and cultural movements, like the character of individuals, “is developed out of a lifetime of choices.” The choices we now make, whether for truth and honor or for expediency and power, will determine our future.

In the mid-1990s, Coulter correlated character development with a belief in God. She asserted that it is virtually impossible to “teach values separate from God,”⁶ amplifying that our “common character attributes” derive from “a belief in a higher being.” Questions to consider are whether Coulter and her acolytes exhibit the character Coulter professes to promote and whether their own beliefs in a higher being have developed godly character within them. Beliefs which are not *internalized*, which are not *practiced*, are *dead* beliefs. A transformed life is an engaged life, one engaged with the things of God.

Coulter Owned the Stage

A perennial speaker at the annual Conservative Political Action Conference (CPAC) held in the nation’s capitol, in 2006, anticipation for Coulter’s performance was high. Throughout the afternoon, the emcee repeatedly announced that the first four rows of seats were specifically reserved for gold club members during Coulter’s speech. The panel preceding her speech was cut short to prepare for hers. Coulter’s personal bodyguard ensured the stage was secure.

Coulter entered as if she owned that stage.⁷

The audience gave her a standing ovation as she graced the mesmerized crowd with her welcoming smile. The enthralled throng was jubilant. Audience members standing along the walls on the sides and back of the packed auditorium jockeyed for better viewing positions. Cameras flashed. And the audience cheered as she began to speak.

³ Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 343.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pg. 342.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 343.

⁶ Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/2/97.

⁷ Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/10/06.

Coulter held the audience in the grip of her words, her voice, her message. A burst of applause and cheers greeted her “Raghead” joke: “I think our motto should be post-9-11, ‘raghead talks tough, raghead faces



consequences.”⁸ Coulter also joked, “So maybe we have some people who will finally take care of the courts? Can we tell the Muslims about the [religious] freeze [in the Supreme Court] and can somebody tell Scalia, Thomas, Roberts and Alito to stay away from work next week?” Just moments later, a deathly silence filled the room as people grasped the full import of Coulter’s express wish that liberal Supreme Court Justices be targeted for assassination. But Coulter quickly lured back her audience.

During Q&A, one religious student asked Coulter what her greatest ethical dilemma was. Coulter toyed with the audience as the hushed auditorium awaited her wise answer to this seemingly deeply personal question. Then she replied, “One time I had a shot at Clinton. I thought, ‘Ann, that’s not going to help your career.’”

The audience went wild in appreciation, suggesting hatred of the former president remains high among conservatives. One can arguably conclude that these conservatives have abandoned principles in the presence of a charismatic figure. A mere two months later, Coulter unashamedly contended, “I have always been

unabashedly anti-murder, anti-rape, and anti-false accusation – and I don’t care who knows about it!”⁸

What Christians Believe

In a 2009 essay,⁹ Coulter offered astonishing clarity on the gospel message: “Christians aren’t people who believe they are without sin; they’re people who know they’re sinners and are awestruck by God’s grace in sending his only Son to take the punishment they deserve.” However, as we have seen, Coulter has difficulty in *living in the grace* she claims to have received from God. Humility and moral integrity are hallmarks of a grace-filled life.

Her very next sentence is equally astonishing, this time for its spiritual naivety and for the psychological projection contained within it: “This is in contradistinction to liberals, all of whom believe they’re on a fast track to heaven on the basis of being ‘basically good’ people – and also believe that anyone who disagrees with that theological view is evil.”

Coulter’s “fast track” terminology was perfected during a controversy in which she claimed that Christians are “perfected Jews” (see chapter 17). For Coulter, all liberals are godless (see chapter 14) and everyone who disagrees with her own theology is necessarily evil.

⁸ Ann Coulter, “Lie Down with Strippers, Wake Up with Pleas,” 4/19/06.

⁹ Ann Coulter, “Liberal Taliban Issues Fatwa Against Miss California,” 5/13/09.

In discussing President Obama's speech at Notre Dame in 2009, Coulter again politicized faith,¹⁰ asserting that "they should have had the administrators of Notre Dame onstage taking a polygraph test on whether they believe in God."¹¹ She added (concerning people she knows nothing about), "I don't believe these people are serious, genuine, practicing Catholics." *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter* questions Coulter's own profession of faith – whether she is a "serious, genuine, practicing" Christian – through an evaluation of her espoused doctrines and an examination of the spiritual fruit exhibited in her life.

It is imperative that we Christians *know* what we believe just as it is equally imperative that we *live* in accordance with those beliefs. Jesus gave a stern admonition to His disciples, saying, "Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven. But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven" (Mt. 10:32-33).

As members of the body of Christ and disciples of Jesus, I believe it behooves us not to limit those verses to a personal, individual avowal of God but rather to view them more broadly to reflect upon an acknowledgement of Jesus Christ within the heart of every believer who is part of the body of Christ. When we deny that God is working within a particular person or a specific fellowship we may well be denying God.

Author and theologian Pete Briscoe points out that ideally our *theology* should become our *biography*. Being believers in the Author and Finisher of our faith, we are called to walk the talk, to live lives of integrity. In so doing, we bring glory to God and fulfill His will. After all, as Christians we are known by the fruit we bear (Mt. 7:16-20, Gal. 5:22-23). What fruit does Coulter bear? Is it godly? Does it bear up under scrutiny?

Ann Coulter is a walking contradiction, full of conundrums which elude easy examination. Despite some solid espoused orthodoxy, her theology contains an unhealthy syncretism of partisanship, heresy and hypocrisy. Politically, Coulter replaces facts with opinions; theologically, she promotes theory over truth. Apparently, she honors God with her lips, but her heart appears far from Him (Mt. 15:8). Those who believe God will *do* His will (Mt. 21:28-32), and not give mere lip service.

Coulter is so obsessed with getting Mitt Romney into the White House that she discards orthodoxy and asserts "Any Christian who has a problem with [Romney's Mormonism] is nuts."¹²

May 20, 2012, 11:51 PM

Any Christian who has a problem with this is nuts - NYT: Romney's Faith, Silent but Deep

Coulter exists somewhere within the four spheres of orthodoxy, hypocrisy, heresy, and apostasy. In her truly unique gospel, Coulter embraces some degree of **orthodoxy** (the person believes and lives the truth) mixed with large measures of **hypocrisy** (the person believes truth but lives a lie) and even **heresy** (the person believes and lives a lie).¹³ Coulter has even flirted with **apostasy** (the person forsakes the truth and

¹⁰ Faith is a recurrent theme among Christians and their worship music – pledging faith in God and extolling the faithfulness of God. Examples include Kutless' *Look What Faith Can Do* (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=REE2_P_bkZY), Casting Crowns' *Courageous* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=L2YiqkWZkhU>), Wayne Watson's *For Such a Time as This* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=LXcJUIAJNW0>), Chris Tomlin's *Everlasting God* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yubLGTOcm8c>), Wayne Watson's *Finest Hour* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=D1MIBokkIEI>), and Kathy Troccoli's *Go Light Your World* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yiSix6Stilo>).

¹¹ Ann Coulter, *Geraldo at Large*, FNC, 5/17/09.

¹² Ann Coulter, tweet, 5/20/12.

¹³ For greater insight in the spiritual and ideological battle in which we are all engaged, see Gary DeMar, *War of the Worldviews: A Christian Defense Manual*, American Vision, 1994, and Thomas Sowell, *A Conflict of Visions: Ideological Origins of Political Struggles*, William Morris, 1987.

embraces a lie), once writing, “If God himself came down from heaven and told me these cops intentionally murdered Amadou Diallo knowing he was unarmed, I would not believe it.”¹⁴

May God sweetly sift the chaff from her soul and spirit and reap an abundant harvest of wheat in her life.

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, “A liberal lynching,” 2/16/00.

Chapter 20

It Really *Is* a God Thing

“And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.” – Romans 12:2

It’s a God Thing

[This section originally appeared as an on-line essay¹ written just two days after reading an essay written by Coulter.]

Have we witnessed a Christmas miracle, a defining moment, a definitional essay which marks the beginning of the new Ann Coulter? Lord, let it be! Or will future columns revert back to the unchristian characteristics to which we have become accustomed in Coulter polemics? Heaven forbid!

Published on January 6th, in her extraordinary essay, “If You Can Find a Better Deal, Take It!”² Coulter cogently and succinctly encapsulated the central precepts of the gospel of Jesus Christ. In a relatively non-polemical fashion. Suggesting a new and improved Ann Coulter may be on the horizon. Which would be the handiwork of God. Let’s all give glory to God.

In her essay, Coulter observed that faith in Jesus Christ’s sacrifice for our sins freed us to be forgiven. She concluded with these exquisite words, “With Christianity, your sins are forgiven, the slate is wiped clean and your eternal life is guaranteed through nothing you did yourself, even though you don’t deserve it. It’s the best deal in the universe.” Truth and humility in one paragraph!

Coulter also wrote that spiritual transformation is the natural consequence of being forgiven by God. All Christians, having been forgiven by God, should therefore live transformed lives in which they no longer dwell in sin. As Coulter put it, “Christianity is also the hardest religion in the world because, if you believe Christ died for your sins and rose from the dead, you have no choice but to give your life entirely over to Him. No more sexual promiscuity, no lying, no cheating, no stealing, no killing inconvenient old people or unborn babies – no doing what all the other kids do.”

Does Coulter believe what she writes? Will she practice what she preaches? Time will tell.³

I first read Ann’s essay that Saturday, just one day after finishing Glenn Beck’s excellent book, *The Christmas Sweater*, a poignant personal tale of redemption and healing. In Beck’s book, a 13-year-old boy named Eddie was confronted with the selfishly evil person he had become, disbelieving that those he had grievously wounded could ever forgive him, fearful of facing those who knew the truth of what he had done. Eddie’s fears were unfounded. Those family and friends – whom Eddie had so deeply wounded – so deeply loved Eddie that they would forgive him anything. As does our God.

¹ Daniel Borchers, “Ann Coulter: It’s a God Thing,” 1/11/10.

² Ann Coulter, “If You Can Find a Better Deal, Take It!” 1/6/10.

³ Within just a few weeks, hopes were dashed by the concluding eliminationistic paragraph of an otherwise laudatory Coulter column: “Republicans should defend any investment houses that never benefited from a government bailout. But anyone who took huge gambles, lost and got bailed out with taxpayer money should be tortured and then shot, miraculously brought back to life, tortured some more, then shot a few more times.” – Ann Coulter, “Obama’s Owned – You Can Bank On It,” 2/10/10. With her very next column (“Ahmadinejad: ‘Yep, I’m Nuclear!’”) 2/17/10, Coulter reverted back to the hostile polemics which have been her métier since before the turn of the millennium.

Eddie discovered forgiveness and redemption in God, and the joy of being forgiven by those whom he had harmed. Love won out. Indeed, Eddie's repentance and receipt of forgiveness marked his passage into emotional maturity and spiritual wholeness. His life – and his behavior – was changed forever!

The Christmas Sweater tellingly expresses the remarkable truth – the good news – that no human being is beyond the power of God to redeem. Christians live in the spiritual reality that God loves the unlovable, forgives the unforgiveable, redeems the irredeemable, and transforms sinners into saints.

Should Ann ever repent and seek forgiveness, I urge all Christians everywhere to embrace her. To all those who have personally experienced the wrath and wretchedness of Coulter, should she repent, forgive her. I for one will be among the first to welcome her with (rhetorically and spiritually) open arms.

We are all sinners, but our Father in heaven is eager to forgive all those who repent and seek forgiveness. The angels rejoice when even one sinner repents. Shouldn't we?

Remember, Jesus died an agonizing death on the cross, surrounded by a mob of people rejoicing in His suffering. He was hated without cause. Indeed, all that He did in life was to help them (and us). Were some of the people in the crowd, those He had befriended, taught, healed, helped? Jesus, while in agony at their hands, loved them (and loved us) so much, that He cried out, "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do."

His love, and His forgiveness, never ends! Nor should ours.⁴

It Really *Is* a God Thing

[This section originally appeared as an on-line essay⁵ written in the midst of the then-latest Coulter controversy.]

Seven months ago, I penned a positive piece commending controversialist Ann Coulter ("It's a God Thing") and extolling the God who can redeem and transform any human being. Today, I must address a



complementary aspect of God's sovereignty in light of Coulter's conduct, one found in the first chapter of Romans.

But before we get to that, consider these circumstances: Coulter is the keynote speaker of a pro-gay organization⁶ and is also scheduled to speak at a Culture Campaign event⁷ just two weeks later. Culture Campaign's mission statement is "To

⁴ See Anthony A. Falzarano, *And Such Were Some Of You!: One Man's Walk Out of the Gay Lifestyle*, Xulon, 2008. Falzarano is currently Executive Director of Parents and Friends Christian Ministries (<http://www.parentsandfriends.20m.com/>) in West Palm Beach, FL. Previously, he founded PFOX – Parents and Friends of Ex-Gays and Gays (<http://pfox.org/default.html>) in Washington, DC. See also Gary Chapman, *The Five Languages of Forgiveness: How to Experience Healing in All Your Relationships*, Northfield Publishing, 2006; and Glenn Beck, *The Christmas Sweater*, Threshold Editions, 2008.

⁵ Daniel Borchers, "It Really Is a God Thing," 8/18/10.

⁶ See <http://www.goproud.org/homocon-2010/>.

⁷ See <http://www.culturecampaign.com/common/img/promos/ann-coulter-marquee.png>.

engage Christians in actively living out and declaring biblical truth in a secular, humanistic American culture.”

To his credit, World Net Daily Founder Joseph Farah removed Coulter from the roster of notables speaking at his Taking America Back Conference⁸ in September. Farah explained: “Ultimately, as a matter of principle, it would not make sense for us to have Ann speak to a conference about ‘taking America back’ when she clearly does not recognize that the ideals to be espoused there simply do not include the radical and very ‘unconservative’ agenda represented by GOProud.”



Coulter’s latest abandonment of conservative principles and Christian morals is striking. Nevertheless, Coulter could not grasp the enormity of her error, nor did she see anything wrong with her behavior. She justified her participation in that pro-gay event – a participation which lends it greater legitimacy and potency – by saying, “They hired me to give a speech, so I’m giving a speech. I do it all the time.”

This is not the first time that Coulter has been morally blind to her words and actions and disregarded the things of God. Indeed, back in 2000, Coulter claimed to know *better* than God: “If God himself came down from heaven and told me these cops intentionally murdered Amadou Diallo knowing he was unarmed, I would not believe it.”⁹

Since then – despite those rare instances when she correctly declares the gospel of Christ (as noted in “It’s a God Thing”) – Coulter has trampled upon the Word of God, twisting and perverting it to suit her needs, and jettisoning it when His truth and will become inconvenient.

For instance, in defending Mel Gibson’s *The Passion of the Christ*, Coulter transformed the gospel of living a transformed life into one of judging who will die. Mocking the evangelical acronym WWJD (What Would Jesus Do?),¹⁰ Coulter created her own acronym, WWJK (Who Would Jesus Kill?),¹¹ missing the whole point of the movie and the theology she was defending.

Coulter herself has turned Christian theology on its head by claiming that “being nice to people is an incidental tenet of Christianity.” She denies the Christian imperative given by Jesus Christ Himself in the Sermon on the Mount – the Golden Rule.

Coulter later oxymoronically described herself as “a mean Christian.”¹² That meanness comes to light in Coulter’s propensity to engage in character assassination and her use of death threats and elimination rhetoric,¹³ even when discussing pro-life issues. Ironically, she frequently sacrifices her fierce anti-abortion views, even in supporting pro-abortion candidates.¹⁴

Personal repentance seems to be another Christian concept which is foreign to Coulter, who boasts: “I have friends I went to summer camp with who say I haven’t changed in that respect. I’ve always talked

⁸ See <http://www.wnd.com/index.php?fa=PAGE.view&pageId=192405>.

⁹ Ann Coulter, Universal Press Syndicate, 2/16/00.

¹⁰ Lost upon Coulter is the imperative of actually emulating Jesus Christ in our conduct, as exhorted in 1st John 2:6, which reads, “He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked.”

¹¹ Ann Coulter, “W.W.J.K.: Who Would Jesus Kill?”, 3/11/04.

¹² George Wayne, “She’d Rather be Right – Ann Coulter: The extreme interview,” *Vanity Fair*, June 2006, pg. 120.

¹³ See <http://www.bradblog.com/?p=4437>.

¹⁴ See <http://coulterapology.com/>.

this way, and I always will.”¹⁵ Ironically, Coulter only regrets being nice: “I’ve never said anything so outrageous that I regret it. Though I’ve regretted things that were too tame.”¹⁶

Spiritual growth *requires* repentance. We *cannot* grow in the grace and knowledge of Jesus Christ without repentance. A Christian who isn’t growing has a dead faith.

Surprisingly, as early as 2002, Coulter claimed that liberals regard themselves as God, a theme which suffuses all of her post-9/11 books. Was (and is) Coulter projecting?

In 1998, fans began lauding Coulter as “the goddess of the conservative movement,” as if any movement which calls itself conservative could have a goddess. Now regarded as a conservative icon and superstar, has Coulter succumbed to her own press?

Since Coulter has exalted herself and her ideas above God and the things of God, has God removed from her the ability to discern right from wrong? Has He given her over to a debased mind – a principle expounded in Romans 1:28 – until she sinks so low that she recognizes her need to turn to God?

Those who continue to enable Coulter to be the worst she can be should be ashamed of themselves. Instead, speak truth to power in love. I urge all Christians to join me in praying for God’s invention in Ann’s life, that the power of the risen Christ may provide redemption and healing.¹⁷

Homocon 2010

The sole speaker at Homocon 2010, Coulter singlehandedly thrust GOProud into the national spotlight for what predictably proved to be a lucrative fundraiser. Despite her pro-traditional family message, her presence significantly furthered the pro-gay rights agenda of the sponsor. The President of GOProud declared, “We are a gay organization, we only work on gay issues, we have never claimed otherwise. My God people.”¹⁸

Indeed, within weeks of the Republican tsunami of 2010, GOProud was at the forefront of organizations urging the incoming Republican Congress “to announce a cease-fire on their pursuit of social and cultural issues” (e.g., traditional marriage).

Ann Coulter on LOGO TV's *The A-List Dallas* - "The gays have got to be pro-life."

Here are is a clip from LOGO TV's *The A-List Dallas* season finale which airs Monday, December 12 at 10 PM ET. The episode features a guest appearance by conservative columnist & best selling author Ann Coulter. Coulter, who serves on GOProud's Advisory Council, appears with *A-List Dallas* cast member Taylor Garret and GOProud co-founder Jimmy LaSalvia.



When asked about her support for GOProud during a Q&A session at CPAC 2011,¹⁹ Coulter said that liberals are using gays, just as they have used other groups, to destroy the family in America. She then

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, “Coulter, sweetly disemboweling the left wing,” *Philadelphia Inquirer*, 7/30/03.

¹⁶ Lynda Wright, “Ms. Right,” *People*, 7/29/02, pg. 107.

¹⁷ I fully expected Ann to use her Wednesday’s syndicated column in rebuttal, employing logic and reason to justify her actions. Instead, Coulter couldn’t wait to orchestrate a media campaign to trash her decade-long friend and benefactor, calling Farah “swine” and a “publicity whore.” Later, she said that Farah and his associates were “fake Christians.” Ten years after proclaiming Gary Bauer (who was standing up for moral and biblical principles) a “Christian fascist,” Coulter now calls people she has known for about a decade (who are standing up for moral and biblical principles) “fake Christians.” *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter* has refrained from denying Coulter’s own membership in the body of Christ, despite her propensity to do so to others.

¹⁸ Joseph Farah, “What Homocon is All About,” *WorldNetDaily*, 8/25/10.

justified the sin of homosexuality and asserted, "for now, I'd just like gays to be part of conservatives, just like blacks and women are, without having a special designation." Coulter concluded, "The left is trying to co-opt gays and we shouldn't let them. Gays are natural conservatives."

"Gays are natural conservatives?"²⁰

Farah disputed Coulter's assertion, exhorting conservatives "to acknowledge that homosexuality *is* sin – and conservatism should never glorify, elevate, edify, excuse, rationalize or condone sin."²¹ He continued, "There's nothing conservative about promoting sin or immorality."

Christian conservative author Star Parker addressed the folly and falsehoods in Coulter's position when she explained her boycott of CPAC.²² Parker wrote that the term "'gay conservative' is an oxymoron," adding "'Gay' is everything that 'conservative' is not" – a far cry from Coulter's formulation that "gays are natural conservatives."

"The foundation of the worldview that so-called 'gay conservatives' embrace has far more in common with liberalism than with conservatism," wrote Parker, observing that the liberal worldview is "man-centered rather than God-centered" and "rejects eternal truths," including sexual and marital norms.

Parker concluded that Americans are now engaged in "a battle for our very soul" to determine our "values and how we understand freedom."

Our values, our freedoms, and our very souls are at stake!

Demonic

With the publication of her eighth best-seller, *Demonic*, a new and even more dysfunctional Ann Coulter emerged. Beautifully written and deeply flawed, *Demonic* would again catapult Coulter to the top of the A-list.²³

Coulter's most recent tepidly-titled book, *Demonic*, again demonstrates her departure from Christian and conservative orthodoxy, as well as playing fast and loose with the truth. *Demonic* is perhaps Coulter's best *and* worst book – dazzling, yet diabolical.

Ann Coulter's latest book is a delightful read, but frighteningly wrong. From the foundational premise through to the derivative conclusions, Coulter is wrong, wrong, wrong. Coulter continues her career-long campaign to demonize the Left, and in doing so, she fabricates and falsifies to vilify, becoming that which she claims to hate.

A brilliant wordsmith, Coulter manipulates and deceives with her words.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/12/11.

²⁰ All doubt about Coulter's spiritual condition was erased with the dedication of her next book, *Demonic* (2011), to Peter Thiel, the billionaire gay activist. Just two months after release of *Demonic*, Coulter was named "Honorary Chair and Gay Icon" for GOProud. Coulter said, "I am honored to serve in this capacity on GOProud's Advisory Council, and look forward to being the Queen of Fabulous." On 5/9/12, GOProud issued a press release praising LGBT activists for pressuring President Obama to endorse same-sex marriage.

²¹ Joseph Farah, "Are homosexuals really 'natural conservatives?'" *WorldNetDaily*, 2/22/11.

²² Star Parker, "'Gay conservative' is an oxymoron," 2/12/11.

²³ See "Chapter 10: Taking a Demonic Turn," in my free PDF book, [The Beauty of Conservatism](http://www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf), available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

Coulter's scriptural and secular foundations for her treatise on "mobs" disagree with her. Coulter's **foundational premise** (supposedly found in Scripture) **is wrong**, as is her **definition of a mob** and the **characteristic traits of a mob** (as found in Gustave le Bon's *The Crowd*).

Coulter's authority on mobs – Gustave le Bon – disagrees with Coulter. In his referenced book, *The Crowd*, le Bon never uses the term "mob," while Coulter uses it exclusively. Le Bon claims *any* collective group of individuals can become a crowd; Coulter asserts *only* liberals can become a mob. Coulter claims that mobs are always demonic; Le Bon declares that crowds can be noble and heroic.

Le Bon uses "crowd" to refer to virtually any group of people, from clubs to sporting spectators, juries, legislative assemblies and political rallies. He even applies "crowd" to the general public, a local or larger community, a populace and peoples – even a nation.

Coulter's partisan description of mobs defies reality. She claims that *only* liberals use slogans and *only* liberals revere their leaders. Coulter has spoken at Tea Party rallies and should have observed their slogans. She herself idolized Ronald Reagan and has been idolized by her own followers.

While Coulter would have us believe mobs are always demonic – and anti-Christian or secular – le Bon treated the Crusades, the Reformation, and the French Revolution as comparable.

Coulter makes much of crowds being irrationally moved by images, exclusively accusing the Left of manipulating crowds through images. But in *Demonic*, Coulter skillfully interweaves very graphic literary images – of events in France and America – to great effect. Indeed, Coulter is renowned for her colorful rhetoric and imaginative sound-bites. Often, her speeches consist of carefully-crafted one-liners, perfect for conjuring up images among the audience.

Ironically, le Bon notes that the crowd responds to snappy sound-bite sentiments (such as Coulter's famous one-liners). In essence, Coulter claims to have written *about* the mob, but her spoken and written style is as though she were *addressing* the mob.

Coulter's false claims include:²⁴

- **Jesus said mobs are demonic.** False.

²⁴ See "Chapter 10: Taking a Demonic Turn," in my free PDF book, [The Beauty of Conservatism](http://www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf), available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.



“There you have it – from the Holy Bible – the mob is demonic!”

- **Mobs are *always* demonic.** False.

“That really is the theme of the whole book: that the mob is demonic and the demons are always a mob.”

- **Mobs are *always* liberal.** False.

“Liberals’ history is not this country’s history – theirs is the history of the mob.”

- **Only mobs (liberals) use slogans.** False.

“It is striking how many slogans liberals have and how pathetic conservatives are at even coming up with slogans.”

- **Only mobs (liberals) engage in hero worship.** False.

“We don’t worship our leaders. We don’t turn them into idols, probably because we have a real Savior.”

- **Only mobs (liberals) entertain conspiracy theories.** False.

Coulter proffers a lengthy “myth column from the fifth column” and later writes, “The one lonely myth believed by more Republicans than Democrats is that Obama was born in Kenya, not Hawaii, and is therefore ineligible to be president. The ‘birther’ theory was concocted by liberals and shot down by the conservative media.”

- **Only the Left demonizes their enemy.** False.

“We certainly don’t demonize the opponents the way they do.”

- **Only the Left employs Nazi rhetoric.** False.

“But one of the points you make in the book and I agree with it wholeheartedly is that liberals are embarrassingly quick to compare the right to the Nazis.”

- **Only the Left uses elimination rhetoric.** False.

“But it is not possible that conservatives would defend or embrace the hooligans. Conservatives think civil society needs to be, you know, civil.”

Despite being a well-written and engaging book, *Demonic* incorporates the prevarication, projection and double-think which have been hallmarks of Coulter’s writing for more than a decade – another classic example of WJWND – What Jesus Would Not Do.

Chapter 21

Prayer

“Confess your trespasses to one another, and pray for one another, that you may be healed. The effective, fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much.” – James 5:16



Prayers vs. Guns

On December 2, 1997, a deranged student of New Freedom Christian High School in Paducah, KY, shot eight fellow students who were participating in a prayer circle. In discussing the tragic shooting and death of three of those students, Coulter exclaimed, “guns are great things. ... If one of those kids in Paducah, Kentucky, if all of them had been emerging from a gun-training class rather than a prayer class, only one person would be dead and it would be the culprit.”¹

Apparently not grasping the fact that these were *children*, Coulter later reemphasized her point: “If those kids had been carrying guns they would have gunned down this one [child] gunman,” concluding with her own words of wisdom, “Don’t pray. Learn to use guns.”

¹ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 12/18/97.

In contrast to Coulter's dismissive approach to fellowship with our providential Father in heaven, Scripture is replete with exhortations to communicate with the One who can change the circumstances of our lives and, indeed, our very beings.²

Pray Without Ceasing

The apostle Paul instructed believers to be "praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, being watchful to this end with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints" (Eph. 6:18). Paul led by example, praying "without ceasing" for his congregations (Rom. 1:9, Eph. 1:16, Phil. 1:3-4, Col. 1:9) and his co-workers (2 Tim. 1:3).

In his excellent book, *Prayer*, renowned author and theologian Philip Yancey emphasizes the soul-changing importance of prayer, writing, "Prayer is a declaration of dependence upon God."³ It "is the act of seeing reality from God's point of view."⁴ He adds, "prayer invites God into my world, and ushers me into God's."⁵ Indeed, though driven to prayer by need, it is in prayer where "I come face-to-face with my greatest need: an encounter with God's own self."⁶

Yancey notes perhaps the most importance aspect of prayer: "The real value of persistent prayer is not so much that we get what we want as that we become the person we should be."⁷ As noted throughout this book, God's deepest desire is to transform us – those whom he has adopted as His children – into the very image of His Son. One of the most effective tools He has provided to achieve that goal is the fervent prayer of those who are engaged in becoming righteous.

Unveiled Eyes

Permit me to conclude this book as it began – with prayer. I am drawn, once again, to 2nd Corinthians chapter 3, because it is Jesus Christ who reveals the truth to us and who infuses His love in us. Paul wrote:

But their minds were blinded. For until this day the same veil remains unlifted in the reading of the Old Testament, because the veil is taken away in Christ. But even to this day, when Moses is read, a veil lies on their heart. Nevertheless when one turns to the Lord, the veil is taken away. Now the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. But we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into the same image from glory to glory, just as by the Spirit of the Lord. (2 Cor. 3:14-18)

² See Philip Yancey, *Prayer: Does It Make Any Difference?*, Zondervan, 2006; Ben Patterson, *God's Prayer Book: The Power and Pleasure of Praying the Psalms*, Tyndale, 2008; and Elmer L. Towns, *Praying Paul's Letters*, Destiny Image, 2008. See also Celine Dion and Andrea Bocelli's *The Prayer* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Yu3o8W5JMuU>), Jaci Valasquez's reverential *I Get On My Knees* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gArr7gyiMBY>), and Darlene Zschech's upbeat *Pray* (<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4jPUfBkLKSo>). Any number of organizations are devoted to prayer, including Intercessors For America (www.ifapray.org) and One Million Praying (www.OneMillionPraying.org). Many Americans take prayer seriously and participate in the National Day of Prayer (<http://nationaldayofprayer.org/>).

³ Philip Yancey, *Prayer: Does It Make Any Difference?*, Zondervan, 2006, pg. 35.

⁴ *Ibid.*, pg. 29.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pg. 167.

⁶ *Ibid.*, pg. 55.

⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 153.

In closing, please join me in prayer:

Dear Father in heaven,

As You created and adopted children, we acknowledge Your sovereignty in our lives, in our culture, and in all the spheres we inhabit in this world. We thank You for the inalienable rights You have bestowed upon us and the blessings from heaven You have showered upon us.

We beseech You to open our hearts and minds to a fuller understanding of Your truth and Your will in our lives. Help us to behold Jesus' work in our lives and to be Jesus for those who do not yet know Him. Open our eyes to greater understanding and deeper transformation. Empty us, cleanse us, fill us. Give us unveiled eyes to see a heavenly perspective of Your work here on earth.

Let us delight ourselves in You and put Your godly desires in our hearts (Ps. 37:4). Let us pursue righteousness that our hearts may be purified and our spirits renewed (Ps. 51:6-10), and that our prayers may be answered (Jas. 5:16).

Father, bless us and keep us, make Your face to shine upon us, be gracious unto us, lift up our countenance upon You, and give us Your peace (Num. 6:24-26). In so doing, please empower us to engage and transform the culture, as You live in us, that we may reveal You and Your will to the world, in word and in deed, in Spirit and in truth.

Give us a spirit to selflessly seek Your will, looking to the long-term things from above and forsaking short-term gain (Mt. 6:33). Embolden us with Your spirit of power, love and a sound mind (2 Tim. 1:7). Keep us mindful of who You are and who You want us to be, and inspire us to make right choices wherever we may find ourselves in this life.

To the God who transforms hollow hearts into hallowed hearts and turns shallow souls into deep spiritual wells, we conclude with a prayer by Reinhold Niebuhr:

“God, grant me the serenity to accept the things I cannot change,
Courage to change the things I can,
And wisdom to know the difference.”

Appendix 1

Sampling of Coulter's Elimination Rhetoric

"I think we ought to nuke North Korea right now just to give the rest of the world a warning. Boom! ... I just think it would be fun to nuke them and have it be a warning ... to the world."

– Ann Coulter

A gifted, quick-witted wordsmith, Coulter's humor is frequently unhealthy, morbid, and even macabre.

Our words and behaviors can reveal our innermost being. In an astonishing debate on *Rivera Live*, in defending the pro-life position, Coulter passionately burst out with these words: "I think that every day when I take the New York City subway. But I can analyze my feelings. My privacy. I would like to kill all of them. I can analyze that and stop myself from killing people on a New York City street."¹ Does Coulter passionately hate people? According to Coulter, she does! Does she desire their death? According to Coulter, yes!

Who can dispute her motives and intentions when she so clearly expresses those motives and intentions? Coulter hates liberals and wants to destroy them!²

Coulter's philosophical predisposition to life can be summed up in six words – her words: "Some are left alive, quick reload." Those words encapsulated Coulter's "six-word memoir" for inclusion in *It All Changed in an Instant*.³

This is reminiscent of her fiery burst of emotion more than a decade earlier when she praised her ability to stop herself "from killing people on a New York City street." Such astonishing restraint! Let me applaud you, Ann.

Coulter warned other guests on *Politically Incorrect*, saying, "I think you would be nicer to me if you thought I was packing [a gun]."⁴ More recently, a similar threat was implicit as she connected watching her much-loved MSNBC shows with cleaning her far-more-deeply loved guns.

Veiled and explicit threats have sprung for Coulter's lips for years. Some of the following remarks were off-the-cuff, others prepared, still others passionately erupted from her heart. None have ever been retracted. After all, Coulter is quite comfortable with her own personal death list.⁵



Coulter: "Totally ironically, Zeke Emanuel is on my death list. Hold the applause. I'm going to be on the death panel."

¹ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 7/11/00.

² See also "Chapter 7: Spawn of Satan Convention" and "Chapter 8: Polemics R Us" in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

³ See Larry Smith and Rachel Fershleiser, *It All Changed in an Instant: Another Six-Word Memoirs by Writers Famous and Obscure*, Harper Perennial, 2010, <http://www.smithmag.net/sixwordbook/2010/02/19/six-words-on-democrats-and-republicans/>.

⁴ Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 2/26/01.

⁵ *Hannity*, FNC, 8/12/09.

Hannity: “In other words, you get to pick who dies.”
 Coulter: “Right. I have a list. Should I start with the ‘A’s’?”
 Hannity: “I can read the headlines tomorrow. It’s going to be Ann Coulter [interrupted].”

Coulter has expressed death wishes for a whole panorama of individuals, among them:⁶

Sen. Lincoln Chafee	Assassination. Essay title: “They Shot the Wrong Lincoln.” ⁷
President Bill Clinton	Assassination. “In this recurring nightmare of a presidency, we have a national debate about whether he ‘did it,’ even though all sentient people know he did. Otherwise there would be debates only about whether to impeach or assassinate.” ⁸
President Bill Clinton	Assassination. “One time I had a shot at Clinton. I thought, ‘Ann, that’s not going to help your career.’” ⁹
President Bill Clinton	Execution. “We ought to spend that money that we’re spending in Iraq on tracking down Bill Clinton and pursuing the death penalty.” ¹⁰
Gov. Gray Davis	Friendly fire. “Both [Al Gore and Gray Davis] were veterans, after a fashion, of Vietnam, which would make a Gore/Davis presidential ticket the only compelling argument yet in favor of friendly fire.” ¹¹
Trans. Sec. Elizabeth Dole	Assault weapons. “But we need so-called ‘assault’ weapons. Otherwise, some government busy-body [former Secretary of Transportation Elizabeth Dole] might get the bright idea of stopping us to make sure our seatbelts are fastened.” ¹²
Sen. John Edwards	Strangling. “I must not be a bird because I just want to strangle him when I see him talking.” ¹³ Assassination. “If I’m going to say anything about John Edwards in the future, I’ll just wish he had been killed in a terrorist assassination plot.” ¹⁴
House Speaker Newt Gingrich	Murder. “I could kill him [Newt Gingrich] myself just for the inane debates that are about to ensue.” ¹⁵
Vice President Al Gore	Friendly fire. “Both [Al Gore and Gray Davis] were veterans, after a fashion, of Vietnam, which would make a Gore/Davis presidential ticket the only compelling argument yet in favor of friendly fire.” ¹⁶

⁶ Coulter and her defenders frequently invoke the “just joking” defense. This is nonsense. One or two such “jokes” in the span of a lifetime might be defensible, but a regular diet of such “jokes” suggests something more sinister, a warped soul which cannot disengage itself from such thoughts and desires. The sheer breadth and depth of these “jokes” – which range from spontaneous and impulsive to planned and deliberate – reveal the depths of the heart of the person speaking them.

⁷ Ann Coulter, “They Shot the Wrong Lincoln,” 8/30/06.

⁸ Ann Coulter, *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*, Regnery, 2002, pg. 107.

⁹ Ann Coulter, CPAC 2006, 2/10/06.

¹⁰ Ann Coulter, *Jon Caldara Show*, KOA, 8/2/07, <http://colorado.mediamatters.org/items/200708060001>.

¹¹ Ann Coulter, “The Democrats’ Laboratory: The Host Organism Dies,” 8/13/03.

¹² Ann Coulter, essay, 8/20/99.

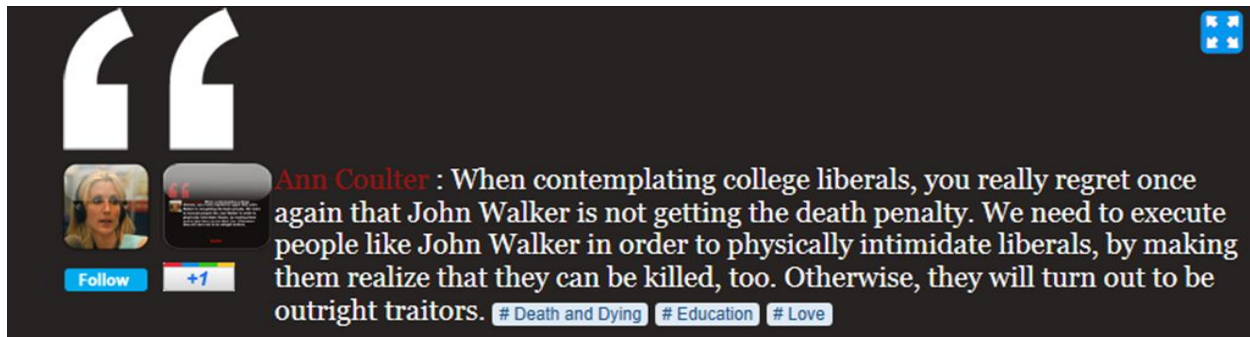
¹³ Ann Coulter, *Imus in the Morning*, MSNBC, 10/6/04.

¹⁴ Ann Coulter, *Good Morning America*, ABC, 6/25/07

¹⁵ Ann Coulter, essay, 8/20/99.

¹⁶ Ann Coulter, “The Democrats’ Laboratory: The Host Organism Dies,” 8/13/03.

Sen. John Kerry	Carpet bombing. "I hope the results are similar, since Osama is D-E-A-D dead in Tora Bora since December, 2001." ¹⁷
Trans. Sec. Norman Mineta	Assassination. "According to initial buoyant reports in early February, enraged travelers rose up in a savage attack on the secretary of transportation. Hope was dashed when later reports indicated that the irritated travelers were actually rival warlords, the airport was the Kabul Airport, and Norman Mineta was still with us." ¹⁸
Michael Moore	Murder. "If the death penalty doesn't deter murder, how come Michael Moore is still alive and I'm not on death row?" ¹⁹
Rep. John Murtha	Fragging. "The reason soldiers invented "fragging." ²⁰
Justice John Paul Stevens	Poisoning. "We need somebody to put rat poison in Justice Stevens's crème brûlée." ²¹
George Soros	Murder Plots. "If none of the advice given by ACORN on those videotapes constitutes conspiracy or aiding or abetting a crime, see this column next week for my opus: '10 Detailed Plans to Kill George Soros and Why This Might Be Right for You.'" ²²



John Walker	Execution. "When contemplating college liberals, you really regret once again that John Walker is not getting the death penalty. We need to execute people like John Walker in order to physically intimidate liberals, by making them realize that they can be killed, too. Otherwise, they will turn out to be outright traitors." ²³
John Walker	Burned alive. "[I] only [regret] that I didn't say it loud enough and in a large enough public forum. And when I said we should 'execute' John Walker Lindh, I mis-spoke. What I meant to say was 'We should burn John Walker Lindh alive and televise it on prime-time network TV.' My apologies for any misunderstanding that might have occurred." ²⁴

¹⁷ Ann Coulter, *Fox & Friends*, FNC, 10/10/04.

¹⁸ Ann Coulter, "Mineta's Bataan Death March," 2/27/02.

¹⁹ Ann Coulter, *Godless: The Church of Liberalism*, Crown Forum, 2006, pp. 25-26.

²⁰ Ann Coulter, Right Wing News, 6/11/06, http://www.rightwingnews.com/archives/week_2006_06_11.PHP#005875.

²¹ Ann Coulter, speech at Philander Smith College, 1/27/06.

²² Ann Coulter, "Subprime Mortgage Crisis Hits Whorehouses," 3/3/10.

²³ Ann Coulter, CPAC 2002, 2/26/02.

²⁴ Ann Coulter, interview with Right Wing News, <http://www.rightwingnews.com/interviews/coulteriffic.php>.

Coulter's death wishes extend towards entire groups:

Combatants

Summary execution. "As non-uniformed combatants, all of the detainees at Guantanamo could have been summarily shot on the battlefield under the Laws of War."²⁵

Investment Bankers

Torture and execution. "Republicans should defend any investment houses that never benefited from a government bailout. But anyone who took huge gambles, lost and got bailed out with taxpayer money should be tortured and then shot, miraculously brought back to life, tortured some more, then shot a few more times."²⁶

Journalists

Assassination. "Would that it were so! That the American military were targeting journalists. ... Yes, they should do that right after targeting the journalists."²⁷

Journalists/Intellectuals

Murder. Even in a foreword to a *Christian* book warning against persecution of Christians, Coulter wrote: "(But on the bright side, the first thing [totalitarian governments] usually do is kill the journalists and intellectuals.)"²⁸

Liberal Justices

Terrorist attack. "So maybe we have some people who will finally take care of the courts? Can we tell the Muslims about the freeze and can somebody tell Scalia, Thomas, Roberts and Alito to stay away from work next week?"²⁹

New York Times

Truck bomb. "My only regret with Timothy McVeigh is he did not go to the New York Times Building."³⁰

New York Times

Truck bomb. "'Of course I regret it. I should have added, 'after everyone had left the building except the editors and reporters.'"³¹

New York Times

Truck bomb. "No, I think the Timothy McVeigh line was merely prescient after *The New York Times* has leapt beyond, beyond nonsense straight into treason, last week. ... Prescient."³²

New York Times

Firing squad. Essay title: "N.Y. Times: Better Dead Than Read." Text: "I prefer a firing squad, but I'm open to a debate on the method of execution. A conviction for treason would be assured under any sensible legal system. ... This is how Bush 'intimidates' the press? The level of



²⁵ Ann Coulter, "Muslims: 'We Do That On First Dates,'" 4/29/09.

²⁶ Ann Coulter, "Obama's Owned – You Can Bank On It," 2/10/10.

²⁷ Ann Coulter, *Kudlow & Cramer*, CNBC, 2/7/05.

²⁸ Ann Coulter, Foreword for Rev. Donald Wildmon, *Speechless: Silencing the Christians*, Pathway Book Service, 2009, pg. xviii.

²⁹ Ann Coulter, CPAC 2006, 2/10/06.

³⁰ George Gurley, "Coultergeist," *New York Observer*, 8/26/02.

³¹ Ann Coulter, interview with Right Wing News, <http://www.rightwingnews.com/interviews/coulteriffic.php>.

³² Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 6/29/06.

intimidation I had in mind is more along the lines of how President Dwight D. Eisenhower “intimidated” Julius and Ethel Rosenberg at 8 in the morning, June 19, 1953.”³³

Coulter’s death wishes extend towards whole nations:

Canada

Crushed. “[Canadians] better hope the United States does not roll over one night and crush them. They are lucky we allow them to exist on the same continent.”³⁴



China

Invasion. “[We should go into China?] Yeah!”³⁵

France

Invasion. Essay title: “Attack France!”³⁶ Coulter’s essay concludes with these words: “If this is a war against terrorism and not a Eurocentric war against Islam, the conclusion is ineluctable: We must attack France. What are they going to do? Fight us?”

France

Nuclear attack. “This is as opposed to France, against whom I think we should launch a preemptive nuclear strike.”³⁷

Iran

Carpet bombing. “Well, I keep hearing people say we can’t find the nuclear material, and you can bury it in caves. How about we just carpet-bomb them so they can’t build a transistor radio?”³⁸

Iran

Invasion. “How about [invading Iran] right now? You have a lunatic running Iran, who’s running around claiming he has a nuke. When do we wait? Do we wait for a city to be taken out?”³⁹

North Korea

Nuclear attack. “I think we ought to nuke North Korea right now just to give the rest of the world a warning. Boom! ... I just think it would be fun to nuke them and have it be a warning ... to the world.”⁴⁰

South Lebanon:

Bombing: “Some have argued that Israel’s response is disproportionate, which is actually correct: It wasn’t nearly strong enough. I know this because there are parts of South Lebanon still standing.”⁴¹

Syria

Bombing. “Perhaps we could put aside our national, ongoing, post-9/11 Muslim butt-kissing contest and get on with the business at hand: Bombing Syria back to the stone age and then permanently disarming Iran.”⁴²

³³ Ann Coulter, “N.Y. Times: Better Dead Than Read,” 7/12/06.

³⁴ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 11/30/04.

³⁵ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 3/13/06.

³⁶ Ann Coulter, “Attack France!” 12/20/01.

³⁷ Ann Coulter, interview, GOPUSA, 6/10/02, https://www.gopusa.com/interviews/coulter_061002.shtml.

³⁸ Ann Coulter and Sean Hannity, *Sean Hannity Show*, ABC Radio Network, 7/21/06, <http://mediamatters.org/items/200607240011>.

³⁹ Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 3/13/06.

⁴⁰ Ann Coulter, *New York Observer*, 1/10/05.

⁴¹ Ann Coulter, “Liberals: Born to Run,” 7/19/06.

⁴² Ann Coulter, “Muslim Bites Dog,” 2/15/06.

Violence Against People

Coulter routinely uses violent language to express violent intentions against people she does not like:

Atheists	Beaten up. “Can’t Some Texan Beat Up the Atheists?” ⁴³
Blacks	Lynching. “Wright said it [the U.S.] is a country ‘where I can worship God on Sunday morning wearing a black clergy robe and kill others on Sunday evening wearing a white Klan robe.’ (Unless, like me, you do all your Klan-related murdering on ‘casual Fridays.’)” ⁴⁴
Bystanders	Beaten by bodyguards. “I’m on Twitter. It’s the only way to follow me and not get your ass beat by my bodyguard.” ⁴⁵
Liberals	Beaten with baseball bat. “I think a baseball bat is the most effective way [to talk to liberals] these days.” ⁴⁶
Moveon.org	Beaten up. “When I give a speech, I don’t think I would want to be the liberal running at me. Let them try it again. All of MoveOn.org is going to end up in the emergency ward.” ⁴⁷
Pie-throwers	Killed. “I was physically attacked this year. I hear MoveOn.org has a bounty for anyone who throws a pie in my face. ... One guy with a broken shoulder and one with a broken nose. And that was when I was traveling totally unprotected. Let ’em try it again, they’ll end up dead.” ⁴⁸
Protestors	Roped and dragged like an animal. “I need these guys at my college speeches” ⁴⁹ (regarding a video of a girl protesting animal cruelty at a rodeo who was roped and dragged like an animal)
Protestors	Beaten up by Muslims. “Wisconsin taxpayers ask: Why aren’t there any Muslims around when you need them? Muslims beat up teacher in London” ⁵⁰
Rioters	Mass murder: “A few well-placed rifle rounds, and the rioting would end in an instant. A more sustained attack on the rampaging mob might save England from itself, finally removing shaved-head, drunken parasites from the benefits rolls that Britain can’t find the will to abolish on moral or utilitarian grounds. We can be sure there’s no danger of killing off the next Winston Churchill or Edmund Burke in these crowds.” ⁵¹
Unions.	Beaten with baseball bat. “NY: Someone needs to take a baseball bat to your government unions” ⁵²

⁴³ www.anncoulter.com, 8/18/10 entry in response to federal appeals court ruling against having memorial crosses along Utah highways.

⁴⁴ Ann Coulter, “Out of ‘Context’ or Out of His Mind?” 4/30/08.

⁴⁵ Uri Friedman, “Ann Coulter: What I Read,” *The Atlantic Wire*, 6/9/11.

⁴⁶ Ann Coulter, *Dayside*, FNC, 10/6/04.

⁴⁷ Ann Coulter, *Scarborough Country*, MSNBC, 5/5/05.

⁴⁸ Ann Coulter, *New York Observer*, 1/3/05.

⁴⁹ www.anncoulter.com, 9/24/10 entry.

⁵⁰ Ann Coulter, tweet on her twitter account, 2/22/11.

⁵¹ Ann Coulter, “The Sun Never Sets on the British Welfare System,” 8/10/11.

⁵² www.anncoulter.com, 10/29/10 entry.

Various people

Torture. “I think the government should be spying on all Arabs, engaging in torture as a televised spectator sport, dropping daisy cutters wantonly around the Middle East and sending liberals to Guantanamo.”⁵³

Yale student

Beaten senseless. “Why hasn’t the former spokesman for the Taliban matriculating at Yale been beaten even more senseless than he already is? According to Hollywood, this nation is a cauldron of ethnic hatreds positively brimming with violent skinheads. Where are the skinheads when you need them? What does a girl have to do to get an angry, club-and torch-wielding mob on its feet?”⁵⁴

Coulter has often warned that future speech disruptions would result in the disruptors ending up in the emergency room. At one event in Minnesota, Coulter instructed conservative students to *physically restrain* liberal students who were voicing their views.

During her book tour for her eighth best-selling book, *Demonic*, Coulter again promoted violence against the Left. A *Human Events*’ headline was gleeful and unequivocal: “Coulter’s Way of Dealing with the Leftist Mob: Smash Their Faces!”⁵⁵

Coulter’s disregard for the value of human life – notwithstanding her assertions of being extremely pro-life – is evident in this interview: “No, [motorcycles] should not be illegal, because [the riders] tend to kill themselves – same thing with smoking, smokers die early ... smokers save the social security system.”⁵⁶

Coulter’s message remains *consistent* – “Yes [let’s get rid of all liberals]! They’ve nearly wrecked the country. Off with them!”⁵⁷ – and her employment of elimination rhetoric envisions the goal while offering the means.⁵⁸

⁵³ Ann Coulter, “Live and Let Spy,” 12/21/05.

⁵⁴ Ann Coulter, “Conservatives Need 12-Step Program to Manhood,” 5/10/06.

⁵⁵ Jason Materra, HumanEvents.com, 6/18/11, one of a series of interviews with Coulter.

⁵⁶ Ann Coulter, *Stossel*, FBN, 1/6/11.

⁵⁷ George Gurley, “Coultergeist,” *New York Observer*, 8/20/02.

⁵⁸ See also my documentary, “[Not Fit to Live](http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/not-fit-to-live.html),” Citizens for Principled Conservatism, 2006, <http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/not-fit-to-live.html> and <http://www.bradblog.com/?p=2368>.

Appendix 2

Selected Doctrines of the Religious Right

“The Religious Right [is] nonexistent ... a mythical enemy ... a bogeyman ... a meaningless concept ... the left’s imaginary enemy ... ghosts of liberal imaginations.” – Ann Coulter

Although Coulter has called the Religious Right fascistic, denied its existence, and even proclaimed being part of it, it behooves us to examine key doctrines embraced by the majority of those who fall within its ranks.

While Christian conservatives *emphasize* truth, they often *exhibit* love. Crisis pregnancy centers provide a perfect example of the merging of truth and love. These centers operate from the truth of the sanctity of human life and compassionately provide for all the needs of the expectant mothers. Truth and love combine to help both mother and child.

Principles frequently invoked by the Christian (not fascist) Right include:

- **Promote justice and righteousness.** Justice and righteousness are the flip side of love and forgiveness and are equally part of God’s holy character. God is a just God (Is. 9:7, Mt. 12:36-37; 13:41-43; 16:27) who commands justice (Rom. 1:18) and has instituted governments to perform their primary duty: administer justice, maintain law and order, and preserve the peace (Rom. 13:3-4, 1 Pet. 2:13-14, 1 Tim. 2:1-2). When Scripture refers to civil rulers, it focuses on justice, not welfare programs (2 Sam. 23:3-4).
- **Be Christian soldiers.** Though Jesus is the Prince of Peace and calls us to be peacemakers, He also clearly states there is evil in the world (John 8:44-47). Evil exists and is at work in the world, often working through people. All humanity is engaged in spiritual warfare (Eph. 6:11-18). Jesus spoke of bringing a sword (Mt. 10:34) and of setting families against one another (Mt. 10:36-37) because there can be no “peaceful coexistence” between good and evil (Gal. 5:16-17). Satan seeks to devour people (1 Pet. 5:8) and he will use whatever means and whomever he can to accomplish that evil goal (Eph. 2:2-3).
- **Live godly lives.** Repentance – turning away from sin – is *pivotal* to the gospel of Jesus. Repentance was preached by John the Baptist (Matt. 3:1-2), Jesus Christ (Mark 1:14-15, Luke 13:3, Rev. 2:5, 16, 21, 22; 3:3, 19) and the apostle Peter (Acts 2:38, 2 Pet. 3:9). Repentance is core to the commission of the Church (Mark 6:12, Luke 24:47). The sanctified Christian life is one of spiritual growth which involves matters of morality and right living. Pure and undefiled religion includes keeping oneself unspotted from the world (Jas. 1:27). We are called to be holy (Eph. 1:4, Titus 2:11-12). Jesus forgave the woman caught in adultery but also told her to “go and sin no more” (John 8:11). We are to put off the old man (Col. 3:5-9) and put on the new man (2 Cor. 8:7, Col. 3:10-17, 2 Pet. 1:5-8). We should stop engaging in the works of the flesh (Gal. 5:19-21) and, instead, yield the fruit of the Spirit (Gal. 5:22-23).
- **Promote traditional values.** Our loving and forgiving Father abhors evil. We are to love the sinner, hate the sin. Many on the Left tolerate, justify and even endorse sin (Gal. 5:13) in their zeal to love the sinner. The Old and New Testament views on marriage, fidelity and probity are clear and consistent throughout Scripture (Heb. 13:4, Jas. 4:4). Numerous lists of right and wrong behavior populate both testaments. (New Testament “sin” lists include Rom. 1:29-32, 1 Cor. 5:9-11; 10:6-10, 2 Cor. 12:20-21, 1 Thess. 4:3-7, 1 Tim. 1:9-10, 2 Tim. 3:2-7, 1 Pet. 4:3-4, and Rev. 21:8.)

Appendix 3

Selected Doctrines of the Religious Left

“All liberals are atheists. Only the ones who have to stand for election even bother pretending to believe in God.” – Ann Coulter¹

Though Coulter calls the Christian Left “godless,” many of their goals and viewpoints are reasonably derived from the Bible. While the Left (and the Right) can and do misapply particular scriptures, it is untenable to deny the *validity* of those scriptures and the *sincerity* of those people of faith who follow their conscience.

While Christian liberals *emphasize* love, all too often doctrinal errors mar the *expression* of that love. Ascribing to government prerogatives reserved to the church, many on the Christian Left transfer the imperatives of Matthew 25 (which are directed to God’s people) to a secular government (which is *incapable* of fulfilling those imperatives).

Principles frequently invoked by the Christian (not godless) Left include:

- **Love makes the world go round.** Jesus came to this world to save the entire world out of His love for everyone in the world (John 3:16-17). In the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus commanded us to love our enemies (Mt. 5:43-48). Jesus declared that the two greatest commandments are loving God and loving other people (Mark 12:29-31). Jesus gave His disciples a new commandment – to love one another with the sacrificial love that He exhibited toward them (John 13:34-35; 15:12-13). The 13 chapter of 1st Corinthians declares love the ultimate spiritual gift. The apostle John emphasized the Christian imperative of love (1 John 2:7-11; 3:13-18; 4:7-21).
- **Make love, not war.** In the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus proclaimed a blessing on peacemakers (Mt. 5:9). The apostle Paul exhorts Christians, if at all possible, to be at peace with all people (Rom. 12:13). Paul also explained that, just as Jesus reconciled the world to God, we are to be participants in His ministry of reconciliation (Rom. chapters 5, 2 Cor. 5:18-19). The apostle Paul further instructs us to clothe ourselves in “tender mercies, kindness, humility, meekness, longsuffering” (Col. 3:12). Christians are to “pursue peace with all men” (Heb. 12:14) and are reminded that “righteousness is sown in peace” (Jas. 3:14).
- **Forgiveness is divine.** Forgiveness, like love, is central to the gospel of Jesus. We are to have a forgiving heart (Matt. 6:14-15; 18:21-35, Luke 17:3-4), forgiving others just as God forgives us (Luke 11:4).
- **Tend to the poor and needy.** In the judgment, Jesus will separate those who cared for others from those who did not (Matt. 25:31-46). Jesus’ commission – and thus, the commission of the body of Christ – ministers to the poor, the broken-hearted, the sick and the oppressed (Luke 4:18). Pure religion tends to the needs of orphans and widows (Jas. 1:27). God blesses those who help the poor (Ps. 41).
- **Don’t be judgmental.** We are not to be judgmental towards others (Mt. 7:1-6). Jesus, in a very non-judgmental manner, famously forgave the woman caught in adultery (John 8:1-11).

¹ Ann Coulter, “Obama is not a Muslim,” 9/1/10.

- **Don't be hypocritical.** Nor are we to be hypocritical (Matthew chapter 23). Jesus fiercely rebuked the Pharisees – not because of their sins, but because of their *hypocrisy*. The apostle Paul publicly rebuked Peter for his atypical hypocrisy (Gal. 2:11-14). Why does God hate hypocrisy? Because *Christian hypocrites blaspheme God* (Rom. 2:20-24). (See also Mt. 21:26-32, Jas. 4:17, 1 Pet. 2:1.)

Appendix 4

Living the Resurrected Life

“That I may know Him and the power of His resurrection.” – *Philippians 3:10*

[*This chapter is adapted from my sermon, “Living the Resurrected Life.”*]¹

Good morning, brethren. May God’s grace and peace abound in your lives!

In previous sermons, we’ve looked at what it means to be “in Christ” – to dwell within the divine relationship of Father, Son, and Spirit. We learned that the church is united with Christ in an intimate relationship like that of a husband and wife.

Last time, we saw that we are blood brothers with Jesus – united in a blood covenant with our Brother and Friend. We examined the import of what it means to be “blood brothers” with Christ and with one another. And we discovered what it means to participate in the divine dance as described in the 17th chapter of the Gospel of John.

As we well know, baptism symbolizes our death, burial, and resurrection with Jesus. Today, we will focus on the *significance* of living the resurrected life of Christ and discuss what *living the resurrected life* in Christ entails.

In our worship service this morning, we offered our lives to Jesus and we claimed that Jesus *is* our life. We worshipped the risen and exalted One. During intercessory prayer, we spoke of the spiritual bloodline we share with Jesus. And we just sang that power is released when we are in the presence of Jesus.

The New Testament writers frequently used the phrase “in Christ.” In this sermon series, we delve deeply into what that two-word phrase means.

Jesus has given us life – and He has called us to an *abundant* life – an abundant life *in Him*. It is an abundant life because we dwell – right now, at this very moment – in a relationship with the Father, Son, and Spirit. When we participate in the deeper spiritual things of God here on Earth, we experience the abundant life. That is accomplished by the *power* of the living God residing within us. It is through *Him* that our lives are abundant and by the power of *His* Spirit that we can live in the *resurrected* life of Jesus Christ.

Where do we go from here?

Do we continue to live our lives as we did before God called us into this transformational relationship with Him?

Or do we participate in the transformation which that relationship with God promises to be completed in us?

Do we remain as we *were* or are we fundamentally changed in the very fabric of our *being*?

¹ Audio can be obtained at <http://www.brotherwatch.com/files/Living%20the%20Resurrected%20Life.mp3>.

Having a Form of Godliness

The first core text for today is found in 2nd Timothy 3:5. It is part of a prophetic pronouncement about the moral and spiritual nature of man during the “last days.” For the purposes of this sermon, we will not address the actual time frame of that fulfillment, but rather the *significance* of its meaning.

Breaking into the context, in 2nd Timothy 3:5, we read, “having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!”

The Amplified Bible renders that verse this way: “For [although] they hold a form of piety (true religion), they deny and reject and are strangers to the power of it [their conduct belies the genuineness of their profession]. Avoid [all] such people [turn away from them].”

Denying the Power

What does it mean to deny the power of God?

These individuals who have a form of godliness but deny God’s power are *empty shells*. They erect false facades – they create Potemkin Villages – to hide the ungodliness within their lives.

They may be baptized, but fail to grasp the symbolism of baptism – resurrection from the dead and renewed life in Christ.

They may participate in Communion, but fail to appreciate its significance – our participation in the very life of the One who died and rose again for us.

They may be members of a congregation, yet fail to value its reality – that they are part of the spiritual body of Jesus Christ – of our Savior – who was resurrected and in whom we were reborn.

These individuals are empty shells living in spiritual Potemkin Villages. Theirs is a *dead* faith.

The Power of the Risen Christ

Our second core scripture is Philippians 3:10. But let’s read verses 8-11 of chapter three for the entire context. In the preceding verses, the apostle Paul highlighted his proud pedigree, one which could be envied by his audience. Paul’s pedigree could be likened to that of an American with Puritan roots.

But then Paul writes:

⁸ Yet indeed I also count all things loss for the excellence of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord, for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and count them as rubbish, that I may gain Christ ⁹ and be found in Him, not having my own righteousness, which is from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ, the righteousness which is from God by faith; ¹⁰ that I may know Him and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being conformed to His death, ¹¹ if, by any means, I may attain to the resurrection from the dead (Phil. 3:8-11).

We are found *in* Him and when we *are* in Him we can *know* Him and we can *know* the *power* of His *resurrection*. In Romans, Paul writes:

concerning His Son Jesus Christ our Lord, who was born of the seed of David according to the flesh, ⁴ and declared to be the Son of God with power according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead (Rom. 1:3-4).

Jesus, the Son of God, rose again with *power* and *glory* and it is *that* resurrection power which sustains us and transforms our very beings.

Witness the apostle Peter who once boasted that he would die for Jesus, but just hours later he denied Him three times. Yet, immediately after Pentecost, Peter boldly and publicly rebuked those who had crucified his Savior.

Jesus' Resurrection

Jesus' resurrection was and remains a central teaching of the gospel. Let's quickly highlight a few verses here:

¹¹ In Him you were also circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, by putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ, ¹² buried with Him in baptism, in which you also were raised with Him through faith in the working of God, who raised Him from the dead (Col. 2:11-12).

³ Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His abundant mercy has begotten us again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead (1st Peter 1:3).

Sadly, that lofty vision all too often eludes us as we live our daily lives in *this* life. Let's turn to chapter one of Ephesians,

²² And He put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be head over all things to the church, ²³ which is His body, the fullness of Him who fills all in all (Eph. 1:22-23)

Here we see the power and the glory of the One who rules the entire universe in resurrection power. Those last verses are astonishing and so hard to grasp. Jesus is "head over all things to the church, which is His body" – we are "in Him."

Verse 23 *describes* the church, the body of Christ, as "the fullness of Him who fills all in all." Isn't that amazing? Jesus is filling us up with Himself!

We have entered into this divine relationship among the Father, Son, and Spirit – and as we participate in this glorious divine dance – Jesus Christ is emptying Himself into the church while we grow in His grace and knowledge and become more like Him.

Redemption → Transformation

We are a *redeemed* people. We are forgiven and freed – freed from sin, freed from death, and freed from ourselves.

What do we *do* with this freedom that we have been given by and in Christ? How are we to *live* our lives? Where do we *go* from here?

While walking in the wilderness, the Israelites were tempted to return to Egypt, to return to the slavery in which they had lived their whole lives. Are *we* to return to *our* former lives as if we had never been redeemed, as if we had never tasted the abundant life of the divine? Heaven forbid!

It's "Come just as you are," *not* "Leave just as you were."

An encounter with God should change *who* we are, *what* we do, *how* we live, how we *want* to live!

After all, we have been *translated* from the kingdom of darkness into His glorious light!

We have been *redeemed* – a first step.

What next? We are now being *sanctified*!

Our lives today are different from what they would have been had we never known the love and transforming power of Jesus Christ. Or, at least, our lives *should* be different.

Redemption is the first step – our spiritual rebirth – to know Jesus Christ and fellowship with Him – to enter into that divine relationship which Jesus prayed us into in John chapter 17.

We have *already* been born again – as babes in Christ. The next step is to *grow* in our relationship with the Father, Son, and Spirit. This is accomplished when we *live in* the resurrected life of Christ.

On Easter Sunday, Jesus was resurrected in power and glory and ascended to heaven. *Now* we abide in Him and He in us. The power of the Creator and Sustainer of the universe *lives in us*.

What Does It Mean to Live a Resurrected Life?

Early last year, political commentator Brit Hume addressed the Tiger Woods' scandal with these remarkable words:

Tiger Woods will recover as a golfer. Whether he can recover as a *person* I think is a very open question, and it's a tragic situation for him. I think he's lost his family. It's not clear to me if he'll be able to have a relationship with his children, but the Tiger Woods that emerges once the news value dies out of this scandal – the extent to which he can recover – seems to me to depend on his faith. He's said to be a Buddhist; I don't think that faith offers the kind of forgiveness and redemption that is offered by the Christian faith. So my message to Tiger would be, "Tiger, turn to the Christian faith and you can make a total recovery and be a great example to the world."²

Brit Hume went where all-too-many Christians fear to tread. Christianity is *unique* among the world's religions. It is the *only* religion which offers hope of salvation, of healing, of "total recovery" as Brit Hume put it. Christianity is unique among the world's religions because it is the only religion founded upon Truth. It is the only religion that has Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior. Christianity is the one true religion built upon the foundation of Jesus Christ, our risen Savior who reigns in resurrection power.

Now, brethren, if any of you here in this sanctuary have a problem with the words I just spoke, then I suggest that you might have a problem with living the resurrected life – because living such a life depends

² Brit Hume, *Fox News Sunday*, FNC, 1/3/10.

upon Jesus Christ living in *your* life – and you might be experiencing the issue we addressed in our first core scripture – “denying the power thereof.”

How can we experience a transformed life in Christ if we deny His *deity*, if we deny His *sovereignty*, if we deny His *ability* to accomplish all that He has set His heart and His will upon achieving?

Brethren, Jesus has set His heart and His will upon bringing each one of us into “total recovery!”

Do you *believe* it?

Do you accept His *deity* – His exclusive claim to being the *only* Way to salvation, the *only* name under heaven by which we may be saved?

Do you accept His *sovereignty* in your life, indeed over *all* things under heaven and on earth?

Do you accept His *ability* to do whatever His will is in your life and in His perfect plan for all of mankind, holding unto His claim that *nothing* is impossible with God and that He will *complete* His work in us?

Living the resurrected life requires accepting all these things and – *stepping out in faith* – walking with Him for the remainder of our earthly lives.

Being Transformed

You are all familiar with the words of Romans 12:1-2. The apostle Paul writes:

¹ I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. ² And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

Spiritual transformation is *essential* in our Christian lives. Unless we are transformed – unless we are renewed day by day – then our walk with God will be *unfruitful*. Indeed, if our spiritual lives are barren, we may well not be walking with God.

Another political pundit observed that spiritual transformation is the natural *consequence* of being forgiven by God. All Christians, having been forgiven by God, should therefore live transformed lives in which they no longer dwell in sin. And I quote: “Christianity is also the hardest religion in the world because, if you believe Christ died for your sins and rose from the dead, you have no choice but to give your life entirely over to Him. No more sexual promiscuity, no lying, no cheating, no stealing, no killing inconvenient old people or unborn babies – no doing what all the other kids do.”³

Have we been truly transformed?

Are we no longer doing what all the other kids are doing?

Or are our lives the same as they were before we were baptized?

³ Ann Coulter, “If You Can Find a Better Deal, Take It,” *Human Events*, 1/6/10.

Paul continued to describe the resurrected life in Romans chapter 12:

¹⁴ Bless those who persecute you; bless and do not curse. ... ¹⁷ Repay no one evil for evil. Have regard for good things in the sight of all men. ¹⁸ If it is possible, as much as depends on you, live peaceably with all men. ... ²¹ Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good (Rom. 12:14,17-18,21).

Growing in Christ

What we have been talking about this morning has to do with growing in the grace and the knowledge of Jesus Christ – of actually growing “*in* Christ.” Remember – we have been grafted into Jesus Christ by our adoption as the very children of God.

In Romans chapter 6, Paul again describes the resurrected life in Christ.

³ Or do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death? ⁴ Therefore we were buried with Him through baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. ⁵ For if we have been united together in the likeness of His death, certainly we also shall be in the likeness of His resurrection (Rom. 6:3-5).

One consistent New Covenant theme is that of growing in Jesus Christ. Again, on the eve of His death, Jesus spoke these words recorded in John chapter 14:

¹² “Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me, the works that I do he will do also; and greater works than these he will do, because I go to My Father. ¹³ And whatever you ask in My name, that I will do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. ¹⁴ If you ask anything in My name, I will do it (John 14:12-14).”

In John chapter 15, we learn that Jesus is the Vine and we are the branches – and that He intends that we bear the fruit of the Spirit listed in Galatians 5:22-23 – love, joy, peace, etc.

As the Vine, *Jesus bears fruit in the branches of our lives* as we grow in Him.

Forgiveness

Early last year, I read Glenn Beck’s excellent book, *The Christmas Sweater*, a poignant personal tale of redemption and healing. In Beck’s book, a 13-year-old boy named Eddie was confronted with the selfishly evil person he had become, disbelieving that those he had grievously wounded could *ever* forgive him, fearful of facing those who knew the truth of what he had done.

Eddie’s fears were unfounded. Those family and friends – whom Eddie had *so deeply wounded* – *so deeply loved* Eddie that they would forgive him *anything*.

Let me repeat that: Those family and friends – whom Eddie had *so deeply wounded* – *so deeply loved* Eddie that they would forgive him *anything*.

As does our God.

If you are an Eddie – someone who has grievously injured another person – go to God for forgiveness and seek forgiveness from those you have wounded. You won’t regret it.

If you have been deeply wounded and scarred by an Eddie – do what Jesus did: forgive and love. You won’t regret it.

You and I are called to lives of forgiveness, to *envelop* and *develop* a forgiving spirit which comes from God alone. Consider our ultimate role model: Jesus.

Love

Let’s look at Jesus’ words and examine His example on the cross.

In His Sermon on the Mount, Jesus said:

⁴³ “You have heard that it was said, ‘You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’
⁴⁴ But I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you, ⁴⁵ that you may be sons of your Father in heaven; for He makes His sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. ⁴⁶ For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax collectors do the same? ⁴⁷ And if you greet your brethren only, what do you do more than others? Do not even the tax collectors do so (Mt. 5:43-47)?”

Later, Jesus revealed the two great commandments. We read in Matthew chapter 22:

³⁷ Jesus said to him, “ ‘You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’ ³⁸ This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹ And the second is like it: ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ ⁴⁰ On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets (Mt. 22:37-40).”

On the eve of His death, Jesus instructed His disciples, in John chapter 15:

¹² “This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. ¹³ Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one’s life for his friends. ... ¹⁷ These things I command you, that you love one another (John 15:12-13,17).”

We are called to love as Jesus loves – *sacrificially* – even to the point of death, if necessary.

Hated Without Cause

Have you ever been hated without a cause? Betrayed by a close friend?

Jesus Christ experienced those very heart-wrenching things. At the cross, He was betrayed, rejected, despised and tortured. Jesus was hated without cause!

So was David, who wrote in Psalm 35:

¹² They reward me evil for good, to the sorrow of my soul. ¹³ But as for me, when they were sick, my clothing was sackcloth; I humbled myself with fasting; and my prayer would return to my own heart. ¹⁴ I paced about as though he were my friend or brother; I bowed down heavily, as one who mourns for his mother. ¹⁵ But in my adversity they rejoiced and gathered together; Attackers gathered against me, and I did not know it; they tore at me and did not cease; ... ¹⁹ Let them not rejoice over me who are wrongfully my enemies; nor let them wink with the eye who hate me without a cause (Ps. 35:12-15,19).

David also wrote, in Psalm 41:9, “Even my own familiar friend in whom I trusted, who ate my bread, has lifted up his heel against me.”

What about Jesus? In John chapter 15, we read the prophetic words of Jesus on the eve of His death:

²⁴ If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would have no sin; but now they have seen and also hated both Me and My Father. ²⁵ But this happened that the word might be fulfilled which is written in their law, “They hated Me without a cause (John 15:24-25).”

What did Jesus do? How did Jesus respond?

With forgiveness and love. “Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.”

Evangelist Timothy Keller writes:

As he looked down from the Cross at his so-called friends, with some of them denying, some betraying, and all forsaking him, he paid the price. He forgave them and died on the Cross for them. On the Cross we see God doing at the cosmic level what we all have to do when we forgive. There God absorbed the punishment and debt for sin himself. He paid it so we did not have to.⁴

Have you ever been deeply wounded by a loved one? Deeply wounded by someone who deliberately and grievously hurt you? Have you been betrayed by a family member or friend?

When you can forgive and love your enemy, when you can forgive and love a friend or loved one who has grievously harmed you or betrayed you, when you can forgive and love someone who hates you without a cause ... then you are abiding in the resurrected life of Jesus Christ. Then you are participating in the sacrificial and redeeming love of God.

The Christian apologist and martyr, Dietrich Bonhoeffer, wrote, “Forgiveness is the Christlike suffering which it is the Christian’s duty to bear.”⁵

⁴ Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pp. 91-92.

⁵ Dietrich Bonhoeffer, *The Cost of Discipleship*, Macmillan, 1959, pg. 100.

Love and Forgiveness – Personal

Let's return to the cross for a moment and see it from Jesus' vantage point.

As He watched the enraged mob who demanded His torture and death, Jesus saw the contorted faces of those who were filled with hatred – who hated Him without cause – who hated the One whose every word and action had been filled with selfless love.

Did Jesus see the faces of former followers who abandoned Him because of His hard sayings? Did He see the faces of those whom He had befriended and healed? Even as he was dying, His love for them was undying – and He loved them to His death that He might give them life.

Let's make this personal. Think of yourself saying these words:

If I – a fallible, imperfect, sinful human being – can forgive and love *that* person who so purposefully and maliciously wronged me – then how much more can and does the perfect divine Father, who has an eternal, infinite and unquenchable love – forgive and love me?

Let's look again at Jesus' first words on the cross: "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do."

They know not what they do.

Perhaps those who purposefully and grievously wounded you did not know what they were doing? What if they did not know the impact their words or behavior would have on you?

Let's turn this around. How often have *we* wounded others – unknowingly, unintentionally – and what if the wounds *we* ignorantly inflicted were perceived as being intentional, malicious?

Joseph

How does this play out in the real world?

Consider the patriarch Joseph. His brothers were envious of him, their father's favorite son. So what did they do? They threw him into a pit – intending to kill him. Then they ate their lunch while listening to his pleas for help. Then they sold him into slavery. We read:

¹⁸ Now when they saw him afar off, even before he came near them, they conspired against him to kill him. ... ²⁴ Then they took him and cast him into a pit. And the pit was empty; there was no water in it. ²⁵ And they sat down to eat a meal (Gen. 37:18,24-25).

We know the rest of the story, though as it was happening, Joseph had no idea of his fate – that he would be sold into slavery, that he would be in slavery and in prison for more than a decade of his life.

In the end, Joseph *forgave* his treacherous brothers; Joseph *loved* his heartless brothers – those who had subjected him to 13 years of hell on earth. Beth Moore, author of *Get Out of That Pit*, addresses this treachery towards Joseph by his brothers. She writes,

Genesis 42:21 describes what was emanating from the pit while the brothers had their picnic. The Amplified Bible says it best: “We saw the distress and anguish of his soul when he begged us [to let him go], and we would not hear.”⁶

His brothers would not *hear* – let alone help. Moore adds this admonition for each one of us: “It’s a tough thing to do, but we’ve got to forgive, even – no *especially* – those who don’t care to be forgiven.”⁷

Let’s return to Joseph’s story. As Prime Minister in Egypt, Joseph revealed himself to his brothers.

⁴ And Joseph said to his brothers, “Please come near to me.” So they came near. Then he said: “I *am* Joseph your brother, whom you sold into Egypt. . . .”¹⁵ Moreover he kissed all his brothers and wept over them, and after that his brothers talked with him (Genesis 45:4,15).

Years later, after the death of the family patriarch, Jacob, Joseph reassured his brothers with these words:

¹⁹ Joseph said to them, “Do not be afraid, for am I in the place of God?”²⁰ But as for you, you meant evil against me; but God meant it for good, in order to bring it about as it is this day, to save many people alive. ²¹ Now therefore, do not be afraid; I will provide for you and your little ones.” And he comforted them and spoke kindly to them (Gen. 50:19-20).

Joseph had a long-term perspective on the past, indeed, a cosmic view of the events that had unfolded in his life. God’s plan was far greater than Joseph – the interpreter of dreams – ever dreamed of and God used the evil intentions of the envious brothers for the benefit of Joseph, his family, and all the people of the world.

Moreover, Joseph modeled and prefigured the love and forgiveness of the One who perfectly loves and perfectly forgives us – the One who deeply desires that we emulate Him.

Experiencing the Power of the Risen Christ

The power of the universe is at our disposal – ready to forgive and to help us forgive. The power of the risen Christ redeems – fully and completely – every part of our lives. Yield to Him. Let Him be strong for you. His strength is manifested in our weakness. And His risen life is manifested in us when we walk with Him.

As Jesus Christ said, without Him we can do nothing. But, as Paul says, we “can do all things through Christ Jesus who strengthens” us.

All things.

Jesus forgave and loved His enemies.

So can we.

⁶ Beth Moore, *Get Out of That Pit*, Thomas Nelson, 2007, pg. 30.

⁷ *Ibid.*, pg. 31.

In our lives, when we forgive the unforgiveable and love the unlovable, we are emulating Jesus, who, after all, forgives and loves us.

God gives us the will and the power to accomplish His will.

We read in 2nd Timothy 1:7, “For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.” This should be *obvious* from all that we have already discussed. The *power* of the *risen* Christ dwells in you and in me. *His* power – which is surprisingly made manifest in our weakness – abides in us as we abide in Him.

As Christians, we have been adopted by God as His beloved sons and daughters. We have been invited to participate in this incredible – and incredibly intimate – relationship with the Father, Son, and Spirit. And we have been called to live a resurrected life in Christ – here, now, and forevermore – by experiencing the *power of the risen Christ*.

May the indwelling of God’s Spirit in us fulfill His purposes in us all as we yield to His will and become fully engaged in the life of the triune God.

Thank you!

Acknowledgements

My gratitude is extended to all those whom God has used to expand my vision of the enormity of His work here on earth and the all-inclusive scope of His grace, redemption, and love. Among them, Anthony Falzarano and Transformation Christian Ministries, authors Lydia Cornell and Katherine Black, and organizations ranging from the Family Research Council and Regeneration to Promise Keepers and Jews for Jesus.

For more than a decade, God has brought many individuals and groups into my life, for a moment, or a season, but always with a purpose. Non-Christians, too, have been exceedingly gracious towards me, including Alan Colmes, Elena Steier, and Rabbi Jim Egolf, and I remain ever in their debt. A host of people have graciously offered their insights into the issues addressed in this book (though they bear no responsibility for the final product and are free to disavow any agreement with particular aspects of this book). Laura Harrison McBride's gracious assistance was particularly noteworthy as was that of Mary Ann Kreitzer. Pastor Damon Albert provided wisdom and encouragement toward the end of the writing and publication process.

A hearty and well-deserved thank you is given to my now deceased pastor, Peter Whitting, and to Joseph W. Tkach, Jr., the president of our denomination, for their grace and their devotion to the written and incarnate Word of God and to the people of God. Robert Knight has been a good friend with wise counsel.

Special mention must be made to Steve Clark, who has rendered his editorial expertise and tirelessly encouraged and supported me despite disagreeing with me politically and theologically.

To my prayer partners at work and at home, you have been an ever-present aid and comfort. I remain indebted to authors who have never heard of me but who have nonetheless changed my life through the work God is doing through them. Most recently, John MacArthur, whose sound exposition of Scripture provides a firm foundation for living and growing in Jesus Christ and fulfilling the work of God, and Beth Moore, who ever-so-poignantly expresses and exhibits the redemptive and transformational truths of being wholly healed by the only One who has made us holy unto Him. As always, Timothy Keller provides fresh insight into God's Word and will.

Last but not no means least, Eileen, my wife of more than a quarter century has been a wellspring of grace and love who enriches those around her and has helped make me a better person through sharing with me those mountaintop and desert experiences together.

Author Bio



A lifelong conservative, Daniel Borchers is a Vietnam-era military veteran with experience as an intelligence analyst and report writer, editor of *Windjammer*, an overseas naval newsletter, and a graduate of Regents College in New York.

Mr. Borchers is Founder and Editor of *BrotherWatch*, a newsletter which examines political, social, cultural and religious issues from a Christian conservative perspective. *BrotherWatch* debuted in August, 1996 and has featured interviews with people across the political spectrum, from Alan Keyes to Alan Colmes.

Mr. Borchers was editor of *Transformation Press*, the flagship publication of Transformation Christian Ministries, from 1996 to 1998. He has published articles in *The Lambda Report*, *The Washington Monthly*, *The Palladium-Item*, *The Worldwide News*, *The Last Ditch*, *The Maryland Star* and *Expanse* magazine, and his letters to the editor have been published in *The Washington Times*, on MSNBC, and on the Fox News Channel.

As a member of New Life Fellowship in Baltimore, Maryland, Mr. Borchers has written and narrated several Christmas and Easter plays, overseen small group prayer meetings, and given sermons and other presentations to the congregation.

Mr. Borchers is a signatory of [The Manhattan Declaration](#) and a member of the [Vast Right-Wing Conspiracy](#).

Mr. Borchers has appeared on numerous radio talk shows, including *The Lonesome Charlie Show*, *The Joyce Kaufman Show*, *Louisiana Live with Jim Engster*, *The Chris Bowman Show*, *The Richard Kaffenberger Show*, *Talk of the Town with Evie Ybarra*, *The Louie Free Show*, *The Jeff Katz Show*, *Talkline with Doug Graham*, the *Doug Stephan Show*, *Bert Lee Show*, *The Frank Beckmann Show*, *Michelson in the Morning*, *The Brian Shaw Show*, *The Hal Ginsberg Show*, *Basham & Cornell*, and *The Steve Deace Show*.

Other Books by the Author

The Beauty of Conservatism (2011)
www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf

Documentaries by the Author

The Gospel of Ann (2005)
<http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/The%20Gospel%20of%20Ann.wmv>

Not Fit to Live (2006)
<http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/not-fit-to-live.html>

Coulter Speak (2006)
<http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Video/Coulter%20Speak.wmv>

By the author of *The Beauty of Conservatism*

(www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf).

“Read Borchers. Find out that Ann Coulter is *Guilty, Slanders*, and covers up for Republican *High Crimes & Misdemeanors*, and *Godlessness*. And while our own hit YouTube video, *The Coulter Hang-Ups*, shows *How to Talk to Ann (if you must)*, Borchers goes far beyond any other Christian who has documented Ann's own *Treason*. As the pastor of Denver Bible Church and a long-time conservative radio host, I'm so grateful that Daniel Borchers makes the case: **Ann Coulter is not to be trusted.**” – **Bob Enyart**, Pastor, Denver Bible Church, talk show host, and pro-life advocate

“Daniel Borchers and I are polar opposites in our approaches to spirituality, except for one thing: We both abhor either liberals or conservatives turning religious concepts on their heads to dupe the public. Having criticized Ann Coulter's public statements in my own work, I was eager to read Daniel Borchers' new book, *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter*. I found it to be a very lucid, very well-researched, very logical, and very Scriptural assessment and critique of her alarming popularity, which she bases on ideas insupportable in Christian thought. Indeed, I would advise Coulter's critics to read this book to learn the Scriptural basis for their distaste if they don't already know them; I would advise her supporters to read it to learn how Coulter uses her lawyer's gift of gab to turn a valuable belief system, Christianity, to her own ends. This book, whether you are a liberal agnostic or a conservative committed Christian, is **a 'must read' in today's ramped-up political atmosphere.**” – **Laura Harrison McBride**, author and journalist

“Borchers, a lifelong conservative, is a man of great integrity and humility. If all Republicans were like Dan, I'd join the party. Disenchanted by the hypocrisy and corruption which have invaded the Conservative Movement, he has made it his mission to confront the extremism which is annihilating our culture, and get the conservative movement back on track.” – **Lydia Cornell**, actress, author, and activist

“It is no use walking anywhere to preach unless our walking is our preaching.”

– St. Francis of Assisi

www.CoulterWatch.com/gospel.pdf